CAPTAIN JOHN HUNTER

CAPTAIN JOHN HUNTER

AN

HISTORICAL JOURNAL

of the Transactions at

ORT JACKSON, AND NORFOLK ISLAN

Including the Journals of Governors

PHILLIP AND KING.

Since the Publication of Phillip's Voyage.

With an Abridged Account of the New Discoveries

In the South Seas.

BY IOHN HUNTER, ESQR.

Post Captain in His Majesty's Navy.

T. Stothard, del.r — From a Sketch by J. Hunter — S. Hall, direxit

To which is prefixed A Life of the Author,

d Illustrated with a Map of the Country, by Lieut.t Dan

And other Embellishments.

ndon, Printed for John Stockdale, Piccadilly, Jan.y 1.

BRITISH MUSEUM

ADVERTISEMENT.

IT has hitherto been the practice of different perſons, even at ſome expence, to repreſent the ſettlements at New South-Wales, and indeed the country itſelf, in the moſt unfavourable light. With what deſign ſuch miſrepreſentations were propagated is only known to themſelves. The publiſher of Commodore Phillip's and Captain Hunter's Voyages, truſts he may claim the merit of giving the public a true ſtate of the country, and of every thing material, that has occurred at thoſe ſettlements, from the moſt authentic documents.

The following ſheets contain but a ſmall portion of the larger work of

a Captain

Captain Hunter, from which they are abridged; conſequently, many tranſactions, though curious and important, are given as conciſely as poſſible, and others are entirely omitted: yet, it is hoped, the ſelection is ſuch as will ſufficiently gratify the curioſity of thoſe who may not have leiſure to peruſe, or are not deſirous of purchaſing the quarto edition.

Whether the partial repreſentations of private individuals, for intereſted ends, or the authentic informations, which the publiſher has ſucceſſively given from the official papers, are moſt to be believed, may be clearly ſeen from the accounts of the proſperity of thoſe ſettlements, which will be found at the end of this volume.

July 5, 1793.

ANEC-

ANECDOTES

OF

JOHN HUNTER, Esq.

CAPTAIN JOHN HUNTER of the navy was born at Leith, in September 1738. His father, who commanded a ship out of that port, during many years, naturally encouraged the early propensities of his son to enter into that dangerous profession. And carrying the young seaman with him at a very early age on a voyage to the coast of Norway, they had the misfortune to be shipwrecked. Soon after their return, our youthful adventurer was sent to his uncle Robert Hunter, a merchant at Lynn-Regis, who,

conſidering him as too young for any profeſſion, prudently ſent him again to ſchool.

This early misfortune, which is incident to a maritime life, did not abate his ardour for naval purſuits. And being recommended to Captain Thomas Knackſton, who at that time commanded the Grampus ſloop, on the Lynn ſtation, he was received on board that veſſel as captain's ſervant, in 1754, doing alſo ſuch duty as he was capable of before the maſt.

In 1755, he was removed to the Centaur of ſeventy-four guns, where, though young, he acted as an able ſeaman till 1757, when he was recommended to Admiral Knowles, who received him as a midſhipman on board the Neptune of ninety guns. In that ſtation he ſerved on the expedition againſt Rochefort. He continued as midſhipman on board the Neptune, and ſerved under Admiral Saunders at the memorable reduction of Quebec in 1759.—In February 1760, he paſſed his examination for lieutenant, but not having ſufficient

ficient intereſt with Admiral Saunders, who ſtill continued on board the Neptune, to procure a commiſſion, he was removed from that ſhip to the Princeſs Amelia, the flag-ſhip of Admiral Durell, to whom he was a little known.—Mr. Hunter was not deterred from perſeverance by diſappointment: but determined to apply himſelf aſſiduouſly to the ſtudy of profeſſional knowledge, though he ſaw no immediate proſpect of advancement. And devoting himſelf to the ſtudy of naval tactics, he ſoon made himſelf maſter of the theory of maritime ſurveying, of practical aſtronomy, and of drawing: whereby he attained that degree of profeſſional ſkill, which, joined to a ſteady and unremitting attention to his duty, has been the means of obtaining for him at length the great object of his hopes.

When the Princeſs Amelia ceaſed to be a flag-ſhip under Sir Edward Hawke, in Quiberon-Bay, Mr. Hunter was recommended

to that admiral, and taken into the Royal George, where he ſerved as midſhipman till peace was reſtored.—During the years 1764 and 1765, he ſerved as maſter's mate with Captain Percival on the Newfoundland ſtation.—In 1766, his old commander Admiral Durell being appointed to the command of the fleet in North America, Mr. Hunter again embarked with him in the Launceſton, as the admiral was his particular friend. The proſpects of advancement from the admiral's approbation were, however, ſoon put an end to by the unfortunate death of that commander, on the third day after his arrival upon his ſtation at Halifax.—After this unlucky event, Mr. Hunter continued in the Launceſton as maſter's mate with Captain Gell, and in 1767, the place of maſter becoming vacant, Captain Gell appointed him to that ſituation, which appointment was confirmed in 1768, by a warrant from Commodore Hood, who was then commander in chief of the fleet in

North

North America.—When the Launceſton was put out of commiſſion at Portſmouth in 1769, he was, ere long, appointed maſter of the Carysfort upon the Jamaica ſtation. The Carysfort, however, returning to England, in 1772, he was removed to the Intrepid, Captain Cranſton, which was then fitting out for the Eaſt-Indies, and in which he acted till the return of the ſquadron under the command of Sir Robert Harland, in 1775.—From the Intrepid, when ſhe was put out of commiſſion, he was ſent as maſter to the Kent, at the particular deſire of Captain Jervis, to whom he was known when midſhipman with Admiral Saunders, that officer being then the admiral's firſt lieutenant. With Captain Jervis he was removed from the Kent to the Foudroyant.—On the appointment of Lord Howe to the command of the fleet employed in America in 1776, Mr. Hunter was recommended by an unknown friend, as a perſon properly qualified to ſerve as maſter of the Eagle, un-

der his lordſhip's immediate command. During his continuance on that ſervice, he conducted the various duties which he had to perform, ſo as to acquire the approbation of that excellent judge of maritime merit. Yet, by concealing his wiſhes, he ſtill continued out of the line of advancement in his profeſſion; his lordſhip naturally having ſuppoſed, that the maſter-attendancy of a dock-yard was his principal object.

In 1779, he was invited by the honourable Keith Stewart, who knew him only from the reputation he had acquired by a long ſeries of active ſervices, to ſerve as a volunteer with him on board the Berwick. Admiral Sir Charles Hardy, who then commanded the fleet, at length appointed him from this ſituation to be ſixth lieutenant of the Union, commanded by Captain John Dalrymple; but this appointment was ſuperſeded on the return of the fleet to Spithead, and he was again invited on board the Berwick by his friend

Captain

Captain Stewart, who was now ordered for the Weſt-Indies. On this ſtation he ſoon obtained a commiſſion from Sir George Rodney, confirming an order, which he had received from Commodore Walſingham, under whoſe command the Berwick ſailed from England as part of a ſquadron to reinforce Admiral Rodney.

On board the Berwick our lieutenant remained during her continuance in the Weſt-Indies; and was in that dreadful hurricane in 1780, when the ſquadron under the command of Admiral Rowley ſuffered ſo ſeverely; when the Thunderer foundered, and the Stirling Caſtle was loſt.

In 1781, the Berwick made one of a ſmall ſquadron commanded by Commodore Stewart, cruizing off Shetland, and afterwards joined the ſquadron under the command of Admiral Sir Hyde Parker, when he engaged the Dutch fleet off the Dogger-Bank.—When Lord Howe hoiſted his flag and took the command of the

grand

grand fleet in 1782, Mr. Hunter was appointed the admiral's third lieutenant, and when his lordſhip ſailed to the relief of Gibraltar, he had riſen to be firſt lieutenant of the Victory. Soon after this event, when the French and Spaniſh fleets, though ſuperior in numbers, declined engaging with ours, he commanded the Spitfire fire-ſhip; and on the arrival of the fleet at Portſmouth, he was appointed by a commiſſion from the Admiralty, on the 15th of November 1782, to the command of the Marquis de Seignally ſloop.

In 1786, when ſhips were preparing to carry out convicts to the ſettlement intended to be formed on the eaſtern coaſt of New-Holland, Captain Hunter was conſidered by Lord Howe, who then preſided at the Admiralty, as a perſon properly qualified for that diſtant ſervice; and he was made ſecond captain of the Sirius, with the rank of poſt-captain, on the 15th of December 1786. As his various ſervices whilſt on this expedition

tion are detailed in the following journal, it will be needleſs to recapitulate them here; though perhaps it may be neceſſary to obſerve, that on the 27th of April 1792, a court-martial was aſſembled at Portſmouth, in conformity to the rules of the ſervice, to enquire into the cauſe of the loſs of the Sirius by ſhipwreck at Norfolk Iſland, on which enquiry Captain Hunter, his officers and ſhip's company, were honourably acquitted.

CON-

tion are detailed in the following Journal. It will be needless to recapitulate them here, though perhaps it may be necessary to observe, that on the 29th of September a court-martial was assembled at Yarmouth, in conformity to the rules of the service, to enquire into the cause of the loss of the Serius by shipwreck at Norfolk Island; on which enquiry Captain Hunter, the officers and ship's company were honourably acquitted.

CONTENTS.

Anecdotes of JOHN HUNTER, *Esq*; Page iii.

CHAPTER I.

The ships destined for Botany-Bay rendezvous at the Mother-Bank.—Leave that place, and proceed on the voyage.—The convicts on board one of the transports attempt an insurrection.—Are timely discovered, and the ringleaders punished.—Arrival at Santa Cruz.—Attempt of a convict to escape.—Departure from Santa Cruz.—Arrive at Rio Janeiro.—Anchor in Table-Bay.—Refreshments procured there.—Captain Phillip quits the Sirius, and proceeds on the voyage in the Supply.—The Sirius arrives in Botany Bay.—Finds the Supply at anchor there.—Leave Botany Bay, and anchor in Port Jackson. - - p. 17

CHAPTER II.

Frequent interviews with the natives.—Weapons described.—Ornaments.—Persons, manners, and habitations.—Method of hunting.

—*Animals deſcribed.—Birds, and inſects.—Departure of the Buſſole and Aſtrolabe.—A convict pretends to have diſcovered a gold mine.—The fraud detected.* Page 32

CHAPTER III.

The Sirius leaves Port Jackſon.—Sails for the Cape of Good Hope, by the Eaſtern Paſſage.—Falls in with many large iſlands of ice.—Caſts anchor in Table Bay.—The ſick ſent on ſhore.—Proviſions procured for the Settlement at Port Jackſon.—Departure of the Sirius.—In great danger from a violent tempeſt.—Arrives ſafe at Port Jackſon, P. 79

CHAPTER IV.

The ſmall-pox makes its appearance among the natives.—Its fatal effects.—A criminal court held.—Six marines tried and convicted.—Governor Phillip viſits Broken-bay.—Explores its various inlets.—Returns to Port Jackſon.—Two natives brought to the ſettlement, and kindly treated.—One of them makes his eſcape, - P. 95

CHAPTER V.

The Sirius and Supply ſail for Norfolk-Iſland.—Land the marines and convicts.—Wreck of

of the Sirius.—Some provisions saved.—Martial Law established.—Ratio of provisions settled.—Vast numbers of birds caught.—In distress for provisions.—Receive a supply from Port Jackson.—Officers and crew of the Sirius leave Norfolk-Island, and arrive at Port Jackson, - Page 147

CHAPTER VI.

Great improvement of the country at Rose-Hill.—Vicissitude of the climate.—Norfolk-Island remarkably healthy.—A native runs away from the settlement.—Frequent visits from the natives.—Governor Phillip wounded by the natives with a spear.—Natives again visit the settlement.—Entertain the governor, &c. with a dance.—Decorate themselves for that purpose.—Method of dancing described.—Music and singing, - P. 177

CHAPTER VII.

Captain Hunter leaves Port Jackson in the Waaksamheyd transport. In danger amongst some islands.—Stewart's islands discovered.—Discover a cluster of islands.—Name them Lord Howe's groupe.—The natives described.—Anchor at the Duke of York's Island.—Attempt

Attempt to procure water.—Are attacked by the natives.—A few ſhots fired.—The natives diſperſed.—A reconciliation effected.—Natives deſcribed.—Weapons.—Ornaments, &c.—Produce and ſoil.—Leave the Duke of York's Iſland.—Natives from the Admiralty Iſlands viſit the ſhip.—Their canoes deſcribed.—Anchor at Hummock Iſland.—Refreſhments procured.—Viſited by the Raja.—A quarrel enſues.—Several of the natives killed.—Articles of barter in requeſt.—Canoes deſcribed.—Leave Hummock Iſland.—Anchor at Batavia, - Page 196

CHAPTER VIII.

Captain Hunter waits on the Governor at Batavia.—Applies for a paſſage to England.—Purchaſes the Waakſamheyd for that purpoſe.—Leaves Batavia.—Arrives at the Cape of Good Hope.—Leaves that place, and anchors at Saint Helena.—Departs from Saint Helena.—Arrives at Portſmouth.—Tables of Latitudes, &c.—Captain Hunter's letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, 236

CHAPTER

CHAPTER IX.

Lieutenant King viſits Monſieur De la Peyrouſe at Botany-Bay.—Polite reception there.—An account of his adventures.—Lieutenant King returns to Port Jackſon.—Sent by Governor Phillip to form a ſettlement on Norfolk Iſland.—Leaves Port-Jackſon.—An iſland diſcovered.—Arrival at Norfolk-Iſland.—Difficulty in finding a landing-place.—Lands the convicts, proviſions, and ſtores.—Ground cleared, and tents fixed.—Vegetables and various ſorts of grain ſown.—General orders for the regulation of the ſettlement, - - Page 257

CHAPTER X.

Regular employment of the convicts.—Thefts detected.—The robbers puniſhed.—Peſtered with rats.—Method of deſtroying them.—Live ſtock on the ſettlement.—Trees diſcovered which afford food for hogs.—Some of the ſettlers poiſoned.—Cured with ſweet oil.—A convict puniſhed for uſing ſeditious language.—His Majeſty's birth-day kept.—Flouriſhing ſtate of the gardens.—Arrival of the Supply.—Four perſons drowned.—

Proviſions and ſtores received.—Arrival of the Golden Grove tranſport.—Marines and convicts brought in the Golden Grove.—Proviſions and ſtores, - Page 286

CHAPTER XI.

Quantity of proviſions received by the Golden Grove.—Timber ſent to Port Jackſon.——Number of perſons on the ſettlement.—Nepean and Phillip Iſlands deſcribed.—Corn reaped.—Taſk-work of the convicts.—The free-people exerciſed.—Plot to ſeize the iſland diſcovered.—Orders made public for the preſervation of regularity.—Oath of allegiance adminiſtered.—Proviſions and ſtores examined, 309

CHAPTER XII.

A violent hurricane at Norfolk-Iſland.—Arrival of the Supply. Convicts ſent from Port-Jackſon. Proviſions and ſtores. Departure of the Supply. Robberies committed. Employment of the convicts. Wheat infeſted with caterpillars. A ſtore-houſe erected.—Arrival of a party of marines from Port-Jackſon. Thefts committed. Orders read for preſerving regularity. A female convict puniſhed. Pernicious effects of the grub-worm.—

worm.—Gardens plundered.—A granary erected. Wheat deſtroyed by parroquets.—Number of inhabitants on the iſland, P. 329

CHAPTER XIII.

The arrival of the Sirius and Supply at Norfolk-Iſland.—The loſs of the Sirius.—Captain Hunter and the crew ſaved.—Martial-Law proclaimed.—Lieutenant-Governor Roſs takes the command.—Lieutenant King leaves Norfolk-Iſland.—Deſcription of Norfolk-Iſland.—Face of the country.—Water—Soil—Climate—Timber—Fiſh—Seaſons—Winds—Coaſt, and Bays.—Preſent ſtate of cultivation.—Number of inhabitants on the iſland.—Grain and live-ſtock.—Lieutenant King arrives at Port Jackſon.—Finds the country greatly improved, - 354

CHAPTER XIV.

Lieutenant King ſails for Batavia.—Diſcovers Tench's-Iſland.—A deſcription of the inhabitants.—Prince William-Henry's-Iſland deſcribed.—Touches at Kercolang.—A deſcription of the inhabitants, their cloathing and utenſils.—Arrival at Batavia.—Interview with the governor.—Departure from

Batavia.—Mortality amongſt the ſailors.—Arrival at the Iſle of France.—An account of that iſland.—Sails from the Iſle of France.—Arrival in the Engliſh Channel, P. 372

CHAPTER XV.

An excurſion into the country.—An interview with the natives.—Governor Phillip wounded with a ſpear.—A ſecond interview with the natives.—Occurrences on that occaſion.—Five convicts effect their eſcape in a boat.—The ſettlement viſited by the natives.—Their cuſtoms, - - 396

CHAPTER XVI.

Fruits in ſeaſon deſcribed.—The manners of the natives.—Diſputes with them.—Arrival of a veſſel from Batavia, - 412

CHAPTER XVII.

The depredations of the natives.—Bannelong's behaviour.—The return of Bannelong to the Settlement.—The manners of the natives further deſcribed, - - 430

CHAPTER XVIII.

An excurſion into the country.—Occurrences on the journey.—Surpriſing dexterity of the natives

tives in climbing trees.—Their ſuperſtition.—Their method of curing wounds.—Their manners and diſpoſition, - Page 442

CHAPTER XIX.

A ſecond excurſion into the country.—The firſt grants of land to ſettlers.—A barter with the natives eſtabliſhed.—The arrival of ſeveral veſſels from England, - 463

CHAPTER XX.

Arrival of the Gorgon, and ſeveral tranſports at Port Jackſon.—The number of convicts brought out in theſe veſſels.—A whale-fiſhery eſtabliſhed on the coaſt of New South Wales. Governor Phillip returns to England, 483

LIST

LIST OF THE PLATES,

WITH

DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER.

Vignette on the Title Page, for the Deſcription, ſee Page - - 102

Head of Captain Hunter to front the Title.

Map of New South-Wales to face Page 32

Family of New South-Wales - 372

A VOYAGE

A VOYAGE TO NEW SOUTH WALES.

CHAPTER I.

The ſhips deſtined for Botany-Bay rendezvous at the Mother-Bank.—Leave that place, and proceed on the voyage.—The convicts on board one of the tranſports attempt an inſurrection.—Are timely diſcovered, and the ringleaders puniſhed.—Arrival at Santa Cruz.—Attempt of a convict to eſcape.—Departure from Santa Cruz.—Arrive at Rio Janeiro.—Anchor in Table-Bay.—Refreſhments procured there.—Captain Phillip quits the Sirius, and proceeds on the voyage in the Supply.—The Sirius arrives in Botany Bay.—Finds the Supply at anchor there.—Leave Botany Bay, and anchor in Port Jackſon.

IT being the intention of government to remove the inconvenience, which this country ſuffered, from the goals being ſo ex-

ceedingly crouded with criminals, who had been by the laws condemned to tranſportation, the eaſt coaſt of New Holland was the place determined upon to form a ſettlement for this ſalutary purpoſe. The eaſt coaſt of New Holland is that country, which was diſcovered and explored by Captain James Cook, in his firſt voyage round the world, and by him called New South Wales. Botany Bay, the only place he entered with the ſhip, which could be called a harbour, having been mentioned in the narrative of that voyage, as a convenient place for a ſettlement, was fixed upon by government for the intended deſign.

On the 25th of October, 1786, his Majeſty's ſhip Sirius, lying in the dock at Deptford, was commiſſioned, and the command given to Arthur Phillip, Eſq; the Supply armed tender was alſo put in commiſſion, and Lieutenant Henry Lidgbird Ball was appointed to command her.

Theſe two ſhips were intended, after having performed the ſervice of eſcorting the convicts to the place of their deſtination, to remain in the country to be employed as the governor might find neceſſary for the public ſervice,

ſervice, until they ſhould be relieved by other ſhips from England.

On the 15th of December, I was informed by a letter from Mr. Stephens, Secretary to the Admiralty, that there was a commiſſion ſigned for me in that office, and deſired I would come to town and take it up. The nature of the ſervice upon which the Sirius might be employed in thoſe ſeas to which ſhe was bound, having been conſidered, it was judged neceſſary that an officer, bearing a certain rank, ſhould command that ſhip in the abſence of Captain Phillip, whoſe preſence, it was to be ſuppoſed, would be requiſite at all times wherever the ſeat of government in that country might be fixed. In conſequence of Mr. Stephens's letter, I repaired to the Admiralty, and received a commiſſion, appointing me Second Captain of his Majeſty's ſhip Sirius, with the rank of Poſt Captain, and with power to command her in the abſence of her principal Captain; ſubject nevertheleſs to his controul, and to ſuch orders and directions for my proceedings as he might ſee occaſion to give me, for the good of the ſervice. This appointment of a Second Captain, to a private ſhip, being the

firſt inſtance in our ſervice, it could not, conſiſtent with the eſtabliſhed regulations of the navy, take place, but by the authority of the King's order in council: an order from his Majeſty in council, authorizing the Lords of the Admiralty to make ſuch appointment, was therefore given.

The tranſports and ſtore-ſhips were directed to rendezvous at the Mother-Bank, and the little fleet deſtined for Botany Bay being all aſſembled there, we ſailed from thence on the 13th of May, 1787. During our paſſage from this place to Teneriffe, a report was made from one of the tranſports, both by the commanding marine officer on board, and the maſter of the ſhip, that a diſcovery had been made of an intended inſurrection amongſt the convicts in that ſhip; in which if they had ſucceeded, they were to have quitted the fleet in the night, and afterwards to have made ſuch uſe of the ſhip, as they ſhould, upon farther conſideration of the matter, determine amongſt themſelves. Captain Phillip had very humanely, a few days previous to this ſcheme, directed that the irons with which moſt of the male convicts had hitherto been confined, ſhould be taken off them

them generally, that they might have it more in their power to ſtrip their clothes off at night when they went to reſt, be alſo more at their eaſe during the day, and have the farther advantage of being able to waſh and keep themſelves clean; this indulgence had no doubt left it more in the power of thoſe who might be diſpoſed to exert their ingenuity, in ſo daring an attempt, to carry their plan into execution with a greater probability of ſucceſs; but I am thoroughly convinced, that ſo ſtrict an attention to duty was paid by the whole of the marines employed on this ſervice, that ſuch an attempt would have terminated in the deſtruction of thoſe who appeared moſt active and forward in it. Two of the principals were brought on board the Sirius, ſeverely puniſhed, and ſent on board another tranſport, properly ſecured in heavy irons.

Without any other occurrence worthy of note, we arrived at Teneriffe on the 4th of June. It was Captain Phillip's intention, when we arrived here, to have remained only three or four days, but we found that the watering of the ſhips was a buſineſs which could not be completed in ſo ſhort a time. A convict one evening, while every body was

employed in clearing a boat of water, contrived to ſlip into a ſmall boat, and dropt away from the ſhip unperceived; when he got to ſome conſiderable diſtance off, he exerted himſelf at his oars, and got on board a foreign Eaſt-India ſhip, which was lying here, and offered himſelf as a ſeaman, but was refuſed; finding himſelf diſappointed in his hope of getting off in that ſhip, he judged it neceſſary, knowing that he ſhould very ſoon be miſſed, and ſearch made after him, to quit that ſhip; he landed to the weſtward of the town, but on a place where there was a good deal of ſurf, and where the rocks behind him were inacceſſible. The officer of marines on board that tranſport, having ordered the convicts to be muſtered as uſual at ſetting the watch, when they were always put below, found this man was miſſing, and ſent immediate information of it to Captain Phillip; who next morning ſent an officer from the Sirius to the governor, requeſting his aſſiſtance in recovering the deſerter; orders were immediately given by the governor for that purpoſe; in the morning early, boats were diſpatched from the ſhips to row along ſhore to the weſtward, to endeavour to recover the boat

boat he had taken away, and a little to the weſtward of the town, they diſcovered the boat beating on the rocks; and rowing in to pick her up, they diſcovered the fellow concealing himſelf in the cliff of a rock, not having been able to get up the precipice: the officer preſented a muſket at him, and threatened if he did not immediately come down and get into the boat he would ſhoot him; the fellow complied, rather than run the hazard of being ſhot, and was taken on board, puniſhed, and put in irons until we got to ſea, when he was liberated in the ſame manner as the reſt.

On the ninth of June, in the afternoon, the tranſports having completed their watering, the ſignal was made from the Sirius for every perſon of our fleet to repair immediately on board their reſpective ſhips, and on the 10th, in the morning, we put to ſea with a light air of wind from the land.

We croſſed the equator on the 14th of July, and anchored at Rio Janeiro on the 7th of Auguſt.

The ſhips in general had been remarkably healthy; the whole number buried ſince we left England was ſixteen, ſix only of that

number had died between Teneriffe and this place, which certainly is a very trying part of the voyage to people who have not been accuſtomed to warm climates, and being fed wholly on ſalt proviſions; many of thoſe whom we had loſt ſince we left Portſmouth, had been lingering under diſeaſes with which they were afflicted when they embarked; conſequently little hope could be entertained of their recovery in ſuch a ſituation and under ſuch circumſtances. On our arrival here, there were but four out of the whole number in fevers, and a few others with various but trifling complaints; and between 20 and 30, in whom ſymptoms of the ſcurvy had lately appeared, the ſeeds of which it was hoped and expected would be effectually eradicated before we left this place. Freſh proviſions were immediately provided on our arrival, and ſerved to the ſhips companies, marines, and convicts; vegetables were alſo provided, of which they were to have a proportion ſerved with their other proviſions every day whilſt we remained here; oranges and other tropical fruits were in vaſt abundance at this time; the convicts alſo had a proportion of oranges with their other proviſions, this fruit being

in

in ſuch great plenty, that the expence attending the purchaſe of a few for each individual a day, was too inconſiderable to be noticed. Indeed, it was no uncommon thing to ſee the country boats, as they paſſed the ſhips, throw in a ſhower of oranges amongſt the people.

We had not been ten days in this harbour, before we found the convicts in every ſhip much more healthy than when we left Spithead. Much pains had been taken by ſome (who, from whatever cauſe, were averſe to the expedition) to make the world believe that we were, whilſt lying at the Mother-Bank, ſo very ſickly as to bury eight or ten every day; and that a malignant diſeaſe raged with great violence on board the tranſports. Among ſuch a number of people confined in ſmall ſhips, to have no ſick on board, was not to be expected; but the reports ſpread by ſome induſtrious perſons exceedingly exaggerated our numbers. I may, without a probability of being much miſtaken, venture to ſay, that there are few country towns in the iſland of Great-Britain, which contain 1500 inhabitants, (the number which the ſhips employed on this ſervice had on board) which have

have not frequently as many ſick as we had, at the time it was given out we buried ſuch numbers daily.

On Monday the 3d of September, the watering of the convoy, and every other part of their refitting being compleated, the ſignal was made from the Sirius for every perſon to repair immediately on board their reſpective ſhips, and at the ſame time the ſignal for unmooring was ſhewn. On Tueſday morning, with a light breeze from the land, we weighed with the convoy, and carried wind enough out to run us clear without the iſlands before night.

On the 14th of October, we anchored with all the convoy in Table-Bay, Cape of Good Hope. As Table-Bay was the laſt port at which we could touch for refreſhments during our voyage, ſuch articles as we were in want of, both for preſent conſumption, and for ſtocking the intended ſettlement, were applied for, in ſuch quantities as we could find room for on board the different ſhips. Eight or ten days elapſed before any anſwer could be obtained from the council, what neceſſaries and in what quantities they could ſupply us with: this delay occaſioned our paſſing more time

time here than was at firſt intended or expected.

A few days before we ſailed, having compleated ſuch articles of proviſions as we wanted, we embarked on board the Sirius ſix cows with calf, two bulls, one of which was ſix or ſeven months old, with a number of ſheep, goats, hogs, and poultry of different kinds; on board one of the tranſports were put three mares, each having a colt of ſix months old, and a young ſtallion; a quantity of live ſtock was alſo put on board the ſtore ſhips; ſo that the whole on government account, I think, amounted nearly to one ſtallion, three mares, three colts, ſix cows, two bulls, forty-four ſheep, four goats, and twenty-eight hogs. The officers on board the tranſports, who were to compoſe the garriſon, had each provided themſelves with ſuch live ſtock as they could find room for, not merely for the purpoſe of living upon during the paſſage, but with a view of ſtocking their little farms in the country to which we were going; every perſon in the fleet was with that view determined to live wholly on ſalt proviſions, in order that as much live ſtock as poſſible might be landed on our arrival.

Novem-

November 12th, having completed all our buſineſs at the Cape, we made preparations for our ſailing; and on the 13th, we weighed with the whole convoy, and ſtood out of the bay.

On the 25th, being in latitude 38° 40′ ſouth, and longitude 25° 05′ eaſt, Captain Phillip embarked on board the Supply, in order to proceed ſingly in that veſſel to the coaſt of New South Wales, where he made ſure of arriving a fortnight or three weeks before us, as ſome of the convoy ſailed very heavy; he took with him from the Sirius, Mr. Philip Gidley King, ſecond lieutenant, and Lieutenant Dawes, of the marines, who had hitherto kept an account of the time-keeper, which he alſo took with him; ſeveral carpenters, ſawyers, and blackſmiths were likewiſe put on board the Supply, in order, if they arrived in ſufficient time, to examine the place attentively; and the governor had fixed on the moſt eligible ſpot to build upon, there to erect ſome temporary ſtore-houſes for the reception of the ſtores, when the convoy arrived; but as a number of working people would be wanted in carrying on ſuch ſervice, three of the beſt ſailing tranſports, under the com-

command of Lieutenant Shortland, the agent, were alſo directed to quit the convoy, and make the beſt of their way to Botany-Bay; Major Roſs, the lieutenant-governor, embarked in one of thoſe tranſports; the remaining tranſports and ſtore-ſhips were left under the care of the Sirius.

We made the land in latitude 34° 50′ ſouth, on the 19th of January, 1788, and the next morning we diſcovered the Supply and the three tranſports at an anchor in Botany-Bay; the former had arrived the 18th, and the three latter the 19th. At eight A.M. we anchored with the whole of the convoy. As the ſhips were ſailing in, a number of the natives aſſembled on the ſouth ſhore, and, by their motions, ſeemed to threaten; they pointed their ſpears, and often repeated the words, wara, wara. On the firſt day of my arrival, I went with the governor to examine the ſouth ſhore, in order to fix on a ſpot for erecting ſome buildings; but we found very little freſh water, and not any ſpot very inviting for our purpoſe: we had a ſhort converſation with a party of the natives, who were exceedingly ſhy.

The

The day afterwards, the governor, accompanied by me and two other officers, embarked in three boats, and proceeded along the coaſt to the northward, intending, if we could, to reach what Captain Cook has called Broken-Bay, with a hope of diſcovering a better harbour, as well as a better country; for we found nothing at Botany-Bay to recommend it as a place on which to form an infant ſettlement. In this examination, a large opening, or bay, about three leagues and a half to the northward of Cape Banks, was the firſt place we looked into: it had rather an unpromiſing appearance, on entering between the outer heads or capes that form its entrance, which are high, rugged, and perpendicular cliffs; but we had not gone far in, before we diſcovered a large branch extending to the ſouthward; into this we went, and ſoon found ourſelves perfectly land-locked, with a good depth of water. We proceeded up for two days, examining every cove or other place which we found capable of receiving ſhips; the country was alſo particularly noticed, and found greatly ſuperior in every reſpect to that round Botany-Bay. The governor, being ſatisfied with the eligibility of this ſituation, deter-

determined to fix his reſidence here, and returned immediately to the ſhips.

On the 25th, the governor ſailed in the Supply, with a detachment of marines, to the new harbour, which Captain Cook had obſerved as he ſailed along the coaſt, and named Port Jackſon; he did not enter it, and therefore was uncertain of there being a ſafe harbour here: it has the appearance from ſea of being only an open bay.

The convoy was again left to my care, the maſters of the ſhips having had previous orders from Captain Phillip to prepare for ſea. On the 26th, I made the ſignal for the tranſports to get under way. We perceived this morning two large ſhips in the offing, ſtanding in for the bay, under French colours: theſe ſhips had been obſerved two days before, but the wind blowing freſh from north-weſt, they were not able to get in with the land. I ſent a boat with an officer to aſſiſt them in, and about an hour after, a breeze ſprung up from the ſouth-eaſt, and they were ſafely anchored in the bay. I then got under way, and with the tranſports worked out of the bay, and the ſame evening anchored the whole convoy in Port Jackſon.

The

The two ſtrangers proved to be the Buſſole and Aſtrolabe, which ſailed from Breſt in June, 1785, upon diſcoveries, and were commanded by Monſ. de la Perouſe.

CHAPTER II.

Frequent interviews with the natives.—Weapons deſcribed.—Ornaments.—Perſons, manners, and habitations.—Method of hunting.—Animals deſcribed.—Birds, and inſects.—Departure of the Buſſole and Aſtrolabe.—A convict pretends to have diſcovered a gold mine.—The fraud detected.

A FEW days after my arrival with the tranſports in Port Jackſon, I ſet off with a ſix oared boat and a ſmall boat, intending to make as good a ſurvey of the harbour as circumſtances would admit: I took to my aſſiſtance Mr. Bradley the firſt lieutenant, Mr. Keltie the maſter, and a young gentleman of the quarter-deck. During the time we were employed on this ſervice, we had frequent meetings with different parties of the natives;

CARMARTHEN MOUNTAINS

What is to be seen of the Country in this direction through the intervals of the Carmarthen Mountains, appears to be exactly similar to what is allready described to the South West.

Round Hill

Of this Hill the Governor desired that the summit might be attained if possible, but on arriving at the Western brow of it a rugged Country between it and Round Hill appeared.

Saddle Hill

This Hill appears of much easier ascent than Round Hill after you get to the foot of it

This part of the Country bearing from Mount Twiss in the direction of N.N.E and N.E. has the appearance of steep Rocky ridges of Hills, rising immediately one above another, and as the distance increases, it continues to appear the same for Thirty miles

This part of the Country appears as above.

In travelling to the N.W. S.W. and W. of Trumpet the distances were allactually measured by common Pacers of which were allowed 2500 to one Mile and directions were ascertained by means of a small Pocket Compas.

The dotted Lines shew, where it is intended to Travel in the course of the Winter Months ensuing, of May, June, July and August, with the words Engraved on the Lines.

The banks of the [illegible] very steep rocky [illegible] ascent, till within [illegible] 10 or 12 miles [illegible]

The Country between Mount Twiss and Round Hill appeared not easy of access.

MOUNT TWISS 14th Dec.r 1789

All this Country as far as the eye can reach from very high Hills appears very Mountainous and covered with Trees.

There is reason to believe that a considerable River runs nearly in this direction, and perhaps falls into the Sea considerably to the Southward of Botany Bay. The Country in this direction as far as the eye can reach is apparantly very Mountanious & Rocky.

This part of the country appears the same as above

Here the Country appears Mountainous

A Rough Sketch giving some idea of a section of the Country on the 13th of Dec.r 1789 and by the appearance of the whole Country from the N.E. round by the S.S.E. it appears nearly the same.

These Ridges and Vallies seem for the most part to run from N. to S. in each Valley there is generally a small run of good Water ab.t a foot wide, in some Places forming Ponds from 4 and 5 to 15 feet wide. The hight of the top of the Hills above the Vallies may be at a rough guess, from 100 to 300 feet Perpendicular.

On our first meeting with the River it appeared to be about 200 feet wide, the bottom Sandy, the stream running about a mile an hour towards N. 60 E. the opposite bank very steep and ab.t 200 feet high and Rocky.

A very small spot which is fit for Cultivation.

A Ford which for depth may be passed but the rapidity of the stream is not to be withstood by a single Person.

Richmond Hill

This Bank is very Sandy

Swampy Country

August 25

August 24th

A Lake of muddy Water about 50 feet wide, apparantly deep. In floods it rises 20 feet. The opposite bank rises beautifully to the hight of about 50 feet.

Sandy the opposite bank the same

Dec.r 1789

This Country between Prospect Hill & the River appears better than on the other side Prospect hill & in many places very good.

Land Various. In some parts pretty good. in other indifferent.

Good Water

Here the Land in many Places is very Good

Dec.r 3 1789

August 27

August 1st

August 3d

A Country of Coppices

The Country between Rose hill & Prospect Hill indifferently Good.

Prospect Hill

Rose Hill

Pretty good Land

Tolerable good Land

Good Land as Natives have

Hilly and Sandy Land

Level Country

Land reedy & Swampy

In floods the water rises to the hight of 30 feet perpendicular, leaving Reeds &c. on the Trees.

August 4

About 200 acres of Land rising prettily & promising for Cultivation.

Probable Course of the River

August 3

Pyramid Hill

It appears more Level towards the South West

Rough Mountainous Country like that in the west Carmarthen Mountains

Track intended in the Winter

Course of the River Nepean

Ninety one

Hundred

Seven Thousand

Five Hundred

Ten Thousand

Five Hundred

Ten Thousand

Five Hundred

Seven Thousand

Five Hundred

Ninety one

Hundred

Year one

The Winter of the Year one

Published Sept.r 22nd 1792. by John Stockdale Piccadilly.

A MAP *of all those* Parts *of the* Territory *of* NEW SOUTH WALES *which have been seen by any Person belonging to the* Settlement *established at* PORT JACKSON, *in* the said Territory.

Faithfully constructed from the best materials that could be obtained. And respectfully Inscribed to Capt Twiss of the Royal Engineers.

By his much obliged & most Humble Serv.t
William Dawes
March 1791.

In travelling to the N.W. S.W. and W.S.W. of Prospect Hill distances, were all actually measured, by counting the number of Paces of which were allowed 2500 to our Geographical mile, and directions were ascertained by means of a pretty good Pocket Compas.

The dotted Lines, shew, where it is intended to Travel in the course of the Winter Months ensuing, of May, June, July and August, with the words Engraved on the Lines.

The banks of the Hawkesbury, are very steep, rocky, and of difficult access, till within the distance of about 10 or 12 miles of Richmond Hill.

Here the Water is fresh

THE HAWKSBURY RIVER

This Country, when viewed from the South Head appears very Rocky

All that can be seen from Boats, of this Country is very Rugged

BROKEN BAY

Longitude 33°. 34'. 36" South Head

very Rocky as above

This Country as far as can be seen from the downs on the Coast appears to be very Rocky

River it appeared to be about 200 a stream running about a mile opposite bank very steep

Richmond Hill

This Bank is very Sandy

Swampy Country

August 24th

A Lake of muddy Water about 50 feet wide, apparantly deep. In floods it rises 20 feet. The opposite bank rises beautifully to the hight of about 50 feet.

Geographical Miles. 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12

English Miles. 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14

Thousands of Paces. 100 200 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 20 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 30

Note, the dotted lines, shew the tracks in which the Country was traversed in 1789.

This Country for 11 or 15 miles from the Sea, appears to be Rocky, & Sandy and Swampy.

Track

Rocky

Tolerable good Land in many places hereabout.

There is a track of good Land to appearance, in many places hereabout

Some good looking Land here

Lieut. Ball's

The Country between Rose hill & Prospect Hill indifferently Good.

Prospect Hill

Rose Hill Redoubt

Latitude 33°. 50' South
Longitude 151°. 28' East

PORT JACKSON
Sidney Cove

The Land about Rose Hill in general is tolerably good, though light and Sandy, in some places a good loam, in others, and a Stiff Clay.

Good Land

NB. the Longitude of the observatory is determined from the observations of Capt Hunter & Lieu.t Bradley

Sandy Swampy Country

Here the Land in many Places is very Good

Good Water

August 27

August 1st

August 5th

A Country of Coppices

Pretty good Land

Tolerable good Land

Good Land Nativeshut

Thousand Pasture

Ninety one Hundred and Ninety one Thousand Pasture

Track intended in the Winter of the Year one Thousand seven hundred and ninety three

Probable Course of the River

BOTANY BAY

Pt. Sutherland

Cape Banks

Point Solander

Swampy Land

It appears more Level towards the South West

Published Sept.r 22.nd 1792. by John Stockdale Piccadilly.

natives, whom we found at this time very numerous; a circumſtance which I confeſs I was a little ſurpriſed to find, after what had been ſaid of them in the voyage of the Endeavour; for I think it is obſerved in the account of that voyage, that at Botany-Bay they had ſeen very few of the natives, and that they appeared a very ſtupid race of people, who were void of curioſity. We ſaw them in conſiderable numbers, and they appeared to us to be a very lively and inquiſitive race; they are a ſtraight, thin, but well made people, rather ſmall in their limbs, but very active; they examined with the greateſt attention, and expreſſed the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, at the different covering we had on; for they certainly conſidered our cloaths as ſo many different ſkins, and the hat as a part of the head: they were pleaſed with ſuch trifles as we had to give them, and always appeared chearful and in good humour: they danced and ſung with us, and imitated our words and motions, as we did theirs. They generally appeared armed with a lance, and a ſhort ſtick which aſſiſts in throwing it: this ſtick is about three feet long, is flattened on one ſide, has a hook of wood at one end, and a

flat ſhell, let into a ſplit in the ſtick at the other end, and faſtened with gum; upon the flat ſide of this ſtick the lance is laid, in the upper end of which is a ſmall hole, into which the point of the hook of the throwing ſtick is fixed; this retains the lance on the flat ſide of the ſtick; then poiſing the lance, thus fixed, in one hand, with the fore-finger and thumb over it, to prevent its falling off ſide-ways, at the ſame time holding faſt the throwing-ſtick, they diſcharge it with conſiderable force, and in a very good direction, to the diſtance of about ſixty or ſeventy yards. I have ſeen a ſtrong young man throw the lance full ninety yards; which, till then, I did not believe poſſible. I meaſured the diſtance. Their lances are in general about ten feet long: the ſhell at one end of the throwing-ſtick is intended for ſharpening the point of the lance, and for various other uſes. I have ſeen theſe weapons frequently thrown, and think that a man upon his guard may with much eaſe, either parry, or avoid them, although it muſt be owned they fly with aſtoniſhing velocity.

While employed on the ſurvey of the harbour, we were one morning early, in the

upper part of it, and at a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhip, going to land, in order to aſcertain a few angles, when we were a little ſurprized to find the natives here in greater numbers than we had ever ſeen them before in any other place: we naturally conjectured from their numbers, that they might be thoſe who inhabited the coves in the lower part of the harbour, and who, upon our arrival, had been ſo much alarmed at our appearance, as to have judged it neceſſary to retire farther up; they ſeemed very hoſtile, a great many armed men appeared on the ſhore wherever we approached it, and, in a threatening manner, ſeemed to inſiſt upon our not preſuming to land. During the whole time we were near them, they hailed each other through the woods, until their numbers were ſo much increaſed, that I did not judge it prudent to attempt making any acquaintance with them at this time: for, as I have already obſerved, we had only a ſix oared boat and a ſmaller one; our whole number, leaving one man in each boat, amounted to ten ſeamen, three officers, and myſelf, with only three muſkets; we therefore for the preſent, contented ourſelves with making ſigns of friendſhip, and

returned to the ſhip. In two days after, we appeared again in the ſame place, better armed and prepared for an interview. Their numbers were not now ſo many, at leaſt we did not ſee them, although it is probable they were in the wood at no great diſtance; but having occaſion to put on ſhore to cook ſome proviſions for the boats crews, I choſe a projecting point of land for that purpoſe, which we could have defended againſt ſome hundreds of ſuch people: I ordered two marine centinels upon the deck, in order to prevent a ſurpriſe, and immediately ſet about making a fire. We ſoon heard ſome of the natives in the wood on the oppoſite ſhore; we called to them, and invited them by ſigns, and an offer of preſents, to come over to us, the diſtance not being more than one hundred yards acroſs: in a ſhort time, ſeven men embarked in canoes and came over; they landed at a ſmall diſtance from us, and advanced without their lances; on this I went up to meet them, and held up both my hands, to ſhew that I was unarmed; two officers alſo advanced in the ſame manner; we met them and ſhook hands, but they ſeemed a good deal alarmed at our five marines who were under

arms

arms by the boats, upon which they were ordered to ground their arms and ſtay by them; the natives then came up with great chearfulneſs and good humour, and ſeated themſelves by our fire amongſt us, where we ate what we had got, and invited them to partake, but they did not reliſh our food or drink.

I was one day on ſhore in another part of the harbour, making friendſhip with a party of natives, when in a very ſhort time, their numbers encreaſed to eighty or ninety men, all armed with a lance and throwing-ſtick, and many with the addition of a ſhield, made of the bark of a tree; ſome were in ſhape an oblong ſquare, and others of theſe ſhields were oval; theſe were the firſt ſhields we had ſeen in the country. Upon examining ſome of theſe ſhields, we obſerved that many of them had been pierced quite through in various places, which they by ſigns gave us to underſtand had been done with a ſpear; but that thoſe ſhields will frequently turn the ſpear, they alſo ſhewed us, by ſetting one up at a ſmall diſtance, and throwing a ſpear at it, which did not go through. They were much ſurprized at one of our gentlemen who pulling

a piſtol out of his pocket, that was loaded with ball, and ſtanding at the ſame diſtance, fired the ball through the thickeſt part of the ſhield, which they examined with aſtoniſhment, and ſeemed to wonder, that an inſtrument ſo ſmall ſhould be capable of wounding ſo deep. Our numbers at this time were what I firſt mentioned, with only three muſkets, one of which I carried. The natives were very noiſy, but did not appear diſpoſed to quarrel; we gave them ſuch little preſents as we had with us, with which they ſeemed well pleaſed; although we had much reaſon afterwards to believe, that ſuch trifles only pleaſed them, as baubles do children, for a moment: for at other times we had frequently found our preſents lying diſperſed on the beach, although caught at by theſe people with much apparent avidity at the time they were offered. While we were employed with this party, we obſerved at a diſtance, a number of women, who were peeping from their concealments, but durſt not gratify their natural curioſity, by appearing openly and converſing with us; as the men appeared here to be very abſolute. I ſignified to the men that we had obſerved the women, and that I wiſhed

wiſhed to make them ſome preſents, if they might be permitted to come forward and receive them. The men ſeemed unwilling to ſuffer them to advance; for we had frequently obſerved, that they took particular care upon every occaſion to keep the women at a diſtance, and I believe wholly from an idea of danger. They deſired to have the preſents for the women, and they would carry and deliver them, but to this propoſal I poſitively refuſed to agree, and made them underſtand, that unleſs they were allowed to come forward, they ſhould not have any. Finding I was determined, an old man, who ſeemed to have the principal authority, directed the women to advance, which they did immediately, with much good humour; and, during the whole time that we were decorating them with beads, rags of white linen, and ſome other trifles, they laughed immoderately, although trembling at the ſame time, through an idea of danger. Moſt of thoſe we ſaw at this time were young women, who I judged were from eighteen to twenty-five years of age; they were all perfectly naked, as when firſt born.

The women in general are well made, not quite ſo thin as the men, but rather ſmaller limbed. As ſoon as the women were ordered to approach us, about twenty men, whom we had not before ſeen, ſallied from the wood, completely armed with lance and ſhield; they were painted with red and white ſtreaks all over the face and body, as if they intended to ſtrike terror by their appearance: ſome of them were painted with a little degree of taſte, and although the painting on others appeared to be done without any attention to form, yet there were thoſe who, at a ſmall diſtance, appeared as if they were accoutred with croſs-belts: ſome had circles of white round their eyes, and ſeveral a horizontal ſtreak acroſs the forehead: others again had narrow white ſtreaks round the body, with a broad line down the middle of the back and belly, and a ſingle ſtreak down each arm, thigh, and leg. Theſe marks, being generally white, gave the perſon, at a ſmall diſtance, a moſt ſhocking appearance; for, upon the black ſkin the white marks were ſo very conſpicuous, that they were exactly like ſo many moving ſkeletons. The colours they uſe are moſtly red and white; the firſt of which is a kind of ochre,

ochre, or red earth, which is found here in conſiderable quantities; the latter is a fine pipe-clay. The bodies of the men are much ſcarified, particularly their breaſts and ſhoulders; theſe ſcarifications are conſiderably raiſed above the ſkin, and although they are not in any regular form, yet they are certainly conſidered as ornamental. The men, thus armed and painted, drew themſelves up in a line on the beach, and each man had a green bough in his hand, as a ſign of friendſhip; their diſpoſition was as regular as any well diſciplined troops could have been; and this party, I apprehend, was entirely for the defence of the women, if any inſult had been offered them. We alſo obſerved at this interview, that two very ſtout armed men, were placed upon a rock, near to where our boats lay, as centinels; for they never moved from the ſpot until we left the beach: I therefore ſuppoſe they were ordered there to watch all our motions. We left the people after a viſit of about four hours, both parties apparently well ſatisfied with all that paſſed.

The men in general are from five feet ſix inches, to five feet nine inches high; are thin, but very ſtraight and clean made; walk very

erect,

erect, and are active. The women are not ſo tall, or ſo thin, but are generally well made; their colour is a ruſty kind of black, ſomething like that of ſoot, but I have ſeen many of the women almoſt as light as a mulatto. We have ſeen a few of both ſexes with tolerably good features, but in general they have broad noſes, large wide mouths, and thick lips; and their countenances altogether not very prepoſſeſſing; and what makes them ſtill leſs ſo, is, that they are abominably filthy; they never clean their ſkin, but it is generally ſmeared with the fat of ſuch animals as they kill, and afterwards covered with every ſort of dirt; ſand from the ſea beach, and the aſhes from their fires, all adhere to their greaſy ſkin, which is never waſhed, except when accident, or the want of food, obliges them to go into the water. Some of the men wear a piece of wood or bone, thruſt through the ſeptum of the noſe, which, by raiſing the oppoſite ſides of the noſe, widens the noſtril, and ſpreads the lower part very much; this, no doubt, they conſider as a beauty; moſt of thoſe we had hitherto met, wanted the two foremoſt teeth on the right ſide of the upper jaw; and many of the women want the two lower joints

of

of the little finger of the left hand, which we have not as yet been able to diſcover the reaſon or meaning of. This defect of the little finger we have obſerved in old women, and in young girls of eight or nine years old; in young women who have had children, and in thoſe who have not, and the finger has been ſeen perfect in individuals of all the above ages and deſcriptions; they have very good teeth in general; their hair is ſhort, ſtrong, and curly, and as they ſeem to have no method of cleaning or combing it, it is therefore filthy and matted. The men wear their beards, which are ſhort and curly, like the hair of the head. Men, women, and children go entirely naked, as deſcribed by Captain Cook; they ſeem to have no fixed place of reſidence, but take their reſt wherever night overtakes them: they generally ſhelter themſelves in ſuch cavities or hollows in the rocks upon the ſea ſhore, as may be capable of defending them from the rain, and, in order to make their apartment as comfortable as poſſible, they commonly make a good fire in it before they lie down to reſt; by which means, the rock all round them is ſo heated as to retain its warmth like an oven for a conſiderable time; and upon a little

little graſs, which is previouſly pulled and dryed, they lie down and huddle together.

And here, we ſee a ſtriking inſtance of the particular care of Providence for all his creatures. Theſe people have not the moſt diſtant idea of building any kind of place which may be capable of ſheltering them from the ſeverity of bad weather; if they had, probably it would firſt appear in their endeavours to cover their naked bodies with ſome kind of cloathing, as they certainly ſuffer much from the cold in winter. Their ignorance in building, is very amply compenſated by the kindneſs of nature in the remarkable ſoftneſs of the rocks which encompaſs the ſea coaſt, as well as thoſe in the interior parts of the country: they are a ſoft, crumbly, ſandy ſtone; thoſe parts, which are moſt expoſed to, and receive the moſt ſeverity of the weather, are generally harder than ſuch parts as are leſs expoſed; in the ſoft parts time makes wonderful changes; they are conſtantly crumbling away underneath the harder and more ſolid part, and this continual decay leaves caves of conſiderable dimenſions: ſome I have ſeen that would hold forty or fifty people, and in a caſe of neceſſity, we ſhould think ourſelves not badly lodged

for

for a night. Wherever you ſee rocks in this country, either on the ſea-ſhore, or in the interior parts, as they are all of this ſoft ſandy kind, you are ſure of finding plenty of ſuch caves.

In the woods, where the country is not very rocky, we ſometimes met with a piece of the bark of a tree, bent in the middle, and ſet upon the ends, with a piece ſet up againſt that end on which the wind blows. This hut ſerves for a habitation, and will contain a whole family; for, when the weather is cold, which is frequently the caſe in winter, they find it neceſſary to lie very cloſe for the benefit of that warmth to which each mutually contributes a ſhare. Theſe bark huts, (if they deſerve even the name of huts) are intended, as we have lately diſcovered, for thoſe who are employed in hunting the kangaroo, opoſſums, or in ſhort, any other animals which are to be found in the woods; for at certain ſeaſons, when thoſe animals are in plenty, they employ themſelves frequently in catching them. As moſt of the large trees are hollow, by being rotten in the heart, the opoſſum, kangaroo rat, ſquirrel, and various other animals which inhabit the woods, when they are purſued, commonly run into the hollow of a tree: in order,

order, therefore, to make ſure of them, which they ſeldom fail in, when they find them in the tree, one man climbs even the talleſt tree with much eaſe, by means of notches at convenient diſtances, that are made with a ſtone hatchet; when he is arrived at the top, or where there may be an outlet for the animal, he ſits there with a club or ſtick in his hand, while another perſon below applies a fire to the lower opening, and fills the hollow of the tree with ſmoak; this obliges the animal to attempt to make its eſcape, either upwards or downwards, but whichever way it goes, it is almoſt certain of death, for they very ſeldom eſcape. In this manner they employ themſelves, and get a livelihood in the woods; they alſo, when in conſiderable numbers, ſet the country on fire for ſeveral miles extent; this, we have generaly underſtood, is for the purpoſe of diſturbing ſuch animals as may be within reach of the conflagration; and thereby they have an opportunity of killing many. We have alſo had much reaſon to believe, that thoſe fires were intended to clear that part of the country through which they have frequent occaſion to travel, of the bruſh or underwood, from which they, being naked,

ſuffer

ſuffer very great inconvenience. The fires, which we very often ſaw, particularly in the ſummer-time, account alſo for an appearance, which, when we arrived here, we were much perplexed to underſtand the cauſe of; this was, that two-thirds of the trees in the woods were very much ſcorched with fire, ſome were burnt quite black, up to the very top: as to the cauſe of this appearance we differed much in our opinions; but it is now plain, that it has ever been occaſioned by the fires, which the natives ſo frequently make, and which we have ſeen reach the higheſt branches of the trees: we ſometimes, upon our arrival here, conjectured that it proceeded from lightning, but upon looking farther, it appeared too general amongſt the woods to have been occaſioned by ſuch an accident.

We had reaſon to believe, that the natives aſſociate in tribes of many families together, and it appeared now that they have one fixed reſidence, and the tribe takes its name from the place of their general reſidence: you may often viſit the place where the tribe reſides, without finding the whole ſociety there; their time is ſo much occupied in ſearch of food, that the different families take different routs;

routs; but, in caſe of any diſpute with a neighbouring tribe, they can ſoon be aſſembled. We are well informed by thoſe whom we have had among us, that they ſometimes have quarrels, and that they endeavour from concealments, to deſtroy thoſe they are at war with. They are by no means a brave and determined people, except when paſſion overcomes them, and then they act as all ſavages do, like madmen. In all their quarrels with one another, they put themſelves under the direction of a chief: how thoſe chiefs are choſen we have not learnt, but have reaſon to believe it is from an opinion of their dexterity in war.

All the human race, which we have ſeen here, appear to live chiefly on what the ſea affords, and conſequently we find the ſea-coaſt more fully inhabited than the interior, or that part of the country which we have had an opportunity of viſiting more remote from the ſea. The men fiſh with a ſpear, or fiſh-gig, in the uſe of which, it is apparent they are very dextrous. The fiſh-gig is in length ſomething more than the war lance, but they can, according to the depth of water, increaſe its length, by a variety of

joints; ſome have one, ſome two, three, or four prongs, pointed and barbed with a fiſh, or other animal's bone. We have ſometimes, in fine weather, ſeen a man lying acroſs a canoe, with his face in the water, and his fiſh-gig immerſed, ready for darting: in this manner he lies motionleſs, and by his face being a little under the ſurface, he can ſee the fiſh diſtinctly; but were his eyes above, the tremulous motion of the ſurface, occaſioned by every light air of wind, would prevent his ſight: in this manner they ſtrike at the fiſh with ſo much certainty, that they ſeldom miſs their aim. The women are chiefly employed in the canoes, with lines and hooks; the lines appear to be manufactured from the bark of various trees which we found here, of a tough ſtringy nature, and which, after being beaten between two ſtones for ſome time, becomes very much like, and of the ſame colour as a quantity of oakum, made from old rope: this they ſpin and twiſt into two ſtrands: in fact, I never ſaw a line with more than two. Their hooks are commonly made from the inſide, or mother of pearl, of different ſhells; the talons of birds, ſuch as thoſe of hawks, they ſometimes make this

uſe of; but the former are conſidered as beſt. In this neceſſary employment of fiſhing, we frequently ſaw a woman with two or three children in a miſerable boat, the higheſt part of which was not ſix inches above the ſurface of the water, waſhing almoſt in the edge of a ſurf, which would frighten an old ſeaman to come near, in a good and manageable veſſel. The youngeſt child, if very ſmall, lies acroſs the mother's lap, from whence, although ſhe is fully employed in fiſhing, it cannot fall; for the boat being very ſhallow, ſhe ſits in the bottom, with her knees up to her breaſt, and between her knees and body, the child lies perfectly ſecure. The men alſo dive for ſhell-fiſh, which they take off from the rocks under water; we frequently ſaw them leap from a rock into the ſurf or broken water, and remain a ſurprizing time under: when they riſe to the ſurface, whatever they have gathered they throw on ſhore, where a perſon attends to receive it, and has a fire ready kindled for cooking. They have no other method of dreſſing their food, than that of broiling. Boiling water they have no conception of, as appeared very lately; for when one of our boats was hawling the ſeine, one

of

of the ſailors had put a pot on the fire ready to dreſs ſome fiſh, and when the water was boiling, ſome fiſh were put in; but ſeveral natives, who were near, and who wiſhed to have more fiſh than had been given them, ſeeing the fiſh put into the pot, and no perſon watching them, a native put his hand into the boiling water to take the fiſh out, and was of courſe ſcalded, and exceedingly aſtoniſhed.

With reſpect to religion, we have not been able yet to diſcover that they have any thing like an object of adoration; neither the ſun, moon, nor ſtars ſeem to take up, or occupy more of their attention, than they do that of any other of the animals which inhabit this immenſe country. Their dead they certainly burn, of which I have been well convinced lately, when employed on the ſurvey of a diſtant branch of Port Jackſon. Some of my boat's crew having, when on ſhore, diſcovered a little from the water-ſide, upon a riſing ground, what they judged to be a freſh grave, I went up and ordered it to be opened; when the earth was removed, we found a quantity of white aſhes, which appeared to have been but a very ſhort time depoſited there: among the aſhes we found part of a human jaw-bone,

and a ſmall piece of the ſcull, which, although it had been in the fire, was not ſo much injured, as to prevent our diſtinguiſhing perfectly what it was. We put the aſhes together again and covered it up as before; the grave was not ſix inches under the ſurface of the ground, but the earth was raiſed the height of our graves in Europe.

In the months of March and April, we found the natives to decreaſe in their numbers conſiderably; but we have no reaſon to ſuppoſe that they retire back into the interior parts of the country; for in all the excurſions which have been made inland, very few have been ſeen. The ſea-coaſt, we have every reaſon at preſent to believe, is the only part of this country which is inhabited by the human race; the land ſeems to afford them but a very ſcanty ſubſiſtence. We have ſeen them roaſt and chew the fern-root. There is a ſmall fruit here, about the ſize of a cherry; it is yellow when half grown, and almoſt black when ripe; it grows on a tree, which is not tall, but very full and buſhy at the top; of this fruit we have often ſeen them eat: it has a good deal the taſte of a fig, and the pulp, or inſide, very much reſembles that fruit in appearance:

pearance: but the ſea is their principal reſource, and ſhell, and other fiſh, are their chief ſupport. They frequently attended our our boats when hauling the ſeine, and were very thankful to the officer for any fiſh he might give them, as in cold weather the harbour is but thinly ſtocked; indeed, when we arrived here it was full of fiſh, and we caught as many as we could uſe, but in the winter they ſeem to quit our neighbourhood. I had reaſon to think, that the people who inhabited Port Jackſon when we firſt entered it were gone farther to the northward, and that it is their conſtant cuſtom, as the cold weather approaches, to ſeek a warmer climate, by following the ſun; and in this practice they have another very powerful incitement, as well as the comfortable warmth of the ſun, which is, that the fiſh incline to the northward, as the cold weather comes on: this conjecture ſeems, in ſome degree, to account for Captain Cook's having ſeen ſo few natives while he lay in Botany-bay, and that it appeared to him the ſea-coaſt was thinly inhabited; for I think it was in April, or May, that he was there.

The animal deſcribed in the voyage of the Endeavour, called the kangaroo, (but by the natives patagorong) we found in great numbers; one was lately ſhot which weighed 140 pounds; its tail was 40 inches long, and 17 in circumference at the root; it is very well deſcribed in Phillip's Voyage: we ate the fleſh with great reliſh, and I think it good mutton, although not ſo delicate as that which we ſometimes find in Leadenhall-market. The ſtrength this animal has in its hind quarters is very great: in its endeavours to eſcape from us, when ſurprized, it ſprings from its hind legs, which are very long, and leaps at each bound about ſix or eight yards, but does not appear ever in running to let its fore-feet come near the ground; indeed they are ſo very ſhort, that it is not poſſible that the animal can uſe them in running: they have vaſt ſtrength alſo in their tail; it is, no doubt, a principal part of their defence, when attacked; for with it they can ſtrike with prodigious force, I believe with ſufficient power to break the leg of a man; nor is it improbable but that this great ſtrength in the tail may aſſiſt them in making thoſe aſtoniſhing ſprings. We for ſome time conſidered their

their tail as their chief defence, but having of late hunted them with greyhounds very ſucceſsfully, we have had an opportunity of knowing that they uſe their claws and teeth. The dog is much ſwifter than the kangaroo: the chaſe, if in an open wood, (which is the place moſt frequented by that animal,) is ſeldom more than eight or ten minutes, and if there are more dogs than one, ſeldom ſo long. As ſoon as the hound ſeizes him, he turns, and catching hold with the nails of his fore-paws, he ſprings upon, and ſtrikes at the dog with the claws of his hind feet, which are wonderfully ſtrong, and tears him to ſuch a degree, that we have frequently been under the neceſſity of carrying the dog home, from the ſeverity of his wounds: few of theſe animals have ever effected their eſcape, after being ſeized by the dog, for they have generally caught them by the throat, and held them until they were aſſiſted, although many of them have very near loſt their lives in the ſtruggle. Some of the male kangaroos are of a very large ſize; I have ſeen ſome, that when ſitting on their haunches, were five feet eight inches high; ſuch an animal is too ſtrong for a ſingle dog, and although he might be

much wounded, would, without the dog had aſſiſtance at hand, certainly kill him. We know that the native dogs of this country hunt and kill the kangaroo; they may be more fierce, but they do not appear to be ſo ſtrong as our large greyhound; there was one not long ago ſeen in purſuit of a kangaroo, by a perſon who was employed in ſhooting, who miſtaking the two animals as they paſſed him to be of the kind he was looking for, he fired at the hindmoſt and brought him down, but when he came up it proved to be a native dog. Of thoſe dogs we have had many which were taken when young, but never could cure them of their natural ferocity; although well fed, they would at all times, but particularly in the dark, fly at young pigs, chickens, or any ſmall animal which they might be able to conquer, and immediately kill, and generally eat them. I had one which was a little puppy when caught, but, notwithſtanding I took much pains to correct and cure it of its ſavageneſs, I found it took every opportunity, which it met with, to ſnap off the head of a fowl, or worry a pig, and would do it in defiance of correction. They are a very good natured animal when domeſticated, but I believe it to

be

be impoſſible to cure that ſavageneſs, which all I have ſeen ſeem to poſſeſs.

The opoſſum is alſo very numerous here, but it is not exactly like the American opoſſum; it partakes a good deal of the kangaroo in the ſtrength of its tail and make of its fore-legs, which are very ſhort in proportion to the hind ones; like that animal, it has the pouch, or falſe belly, for the ſafety of its young in time of danger, and its colour is nearly the ſame, but the fur is thicker and finer. There are ſeveral other animals of a ſmaller ſize, down as low as the field-rat, which in ſome part or other partake of the kangaroo and opoſſum: we have caught many rats with this pouch for carrying their young when purſued, and the legs, claws, and tail of this rat are exactly like the kangaroo. It would appear, from the great ſimilarity in ſome part or other of the different quadrupeds which we find here, that there is a promiſcuous intercourſe between the different ſexes of all thoſe animals. The ſame obſervation might be made alſo on the fiſhes of the ſea, on the fowls of the air, and, I may add, the trees of the foreſt. It was wonderful to ſee what a vaſt variety of fiſh were caught, which, in ſome part or other,

partake

partake of the ſhark: it is no uncommon thing to ſee a ſkait's head and ſhoulders to the hind part of a ſhark, or a ſhark's head to the body of a large mullet, and ſometimes to the flat body of a ſting-ray.

With reſpect to the feathered tribe, the parrot prevails: we have ſhot birds, with the head, neck, and bill of a parrot, and with the ſame variety of the moſt beautiful plumage on thoſe parts for which that bird here is diſtinguiſhed, and a tail and body of a different make and colour, with long, ſtraight, and delicate made feet and legs; which is the very reverſe of any bird of the parrot kind. I have alſo ſeen a bird, with the legs and feet of a parrot, the head and neck made and coloured like the common ſea-gull, and the wings and tail of a hawk. I have likewiſe ſeen trees bearing three different kinds of leaves, and frequently have found others, bearing the leaf of the gum-tree, with the gum exuding from it, and covered with bark of a very different kind.

There are a great variety of birds in this country; all thoſe of the parrot tribe, ſuch as the macaw, cockatoo, lorey, green parrot, and parroquets of different kinds and ſizes,

are

are clothed with the moſt beautiful plumage that can be conceived; it would require the pencil of an able limner to give a ſtranger an idea of them, for it is impoſſible to deſcribe them by words. The common crow is found here in conſiderable numbers, but the ſound of their voice and manner of croaking, is very different from thoſe in Europe. There are alſo vaſt numbers of hawks, of various ſizes and colours. Here are likewiſe pigeons and quails, with a great variety of ſmaller birds, but I have not found one with a pleaſing note. There have been ſeveral large birds ſeen ſince we arrived in this port; they were ſuppoſed, by thoſe who firſt ſaw them, to be the oſtrich, as they could not fly when purſued, but ran exceedingly faſt; ſo much ſo, that a very ſtrong and fleet greyhound could not come near them: one was ſhot, which gave us an opportunity of a more cloſe examination. Some were of opinion that it was the emew, which I think is particularly deſcribed by Dr. Goldſmith, from Linneus; others imagined it to be the caſſowary, but it far exceeds that bird in ſize; it was, when ſtanding, ſeven feet two inches, from its feet to the upper part of its head; the only difference

ference which I could perceive, between this bird and the oſtrich, was in its bill, which appeared to me to be narrower at the point, and it has three toes, which I am told is not the caſe with the oſtrich: it has one characteriſtic, by which it may be known, and which we thought very extraordinary; this is that two diſtinct feathers grew out from every quill. The fleſh of this bird, although coarſe, was thought by us delicious meat; it had much the appearance, when raw, of neck-beef; a party of five, myſelf included, dined on a ſide-bone of it moſt ſumptuouſly. The pot or ſpit received every thing which we could catch or kill, and the common crow was reliſhed here as well as the barn-door fowl is in England.

Of inſects there are as great a variety here as of birds; the ſcorpion, centipede, ſpider, ant, and many others; the ants are of various ſizes, from the ſmalleſt known in Europe, to the ſize of near an inch long; ſome are black, ſome white, and others, of the largeſt ſort, reddiſh; thoſe of this kind are really a formidable little animal; if you tread near the neſt, (which is generally under ground, with various little paſſages or outlets) and have

diſturbed

diſturbed them, they will ſally forth in vaſt numbers, attack their diſturbers with aſtoniſhing courage, and even purſue them to a conſiderable diſtance; and their bite is attended for a time with a moſt acute pain. Some build their neſts againſt a tree, to the ſize of a large bee-hive; another kind raiſes little mounts on the ground, of clay, to the height of four feet. In ſpeaking of the ſpider, it would be improper to be ſilent upon the induſtry of this little creature; I call them little, although, if compared with our common ſpider, they are very large; they ſpread their web in the woods between trees, generally to a diſtance of twelve or fourteen yards, and weave them ſo very ſtrong, that it requires conſiderable force to break them. I have ſeen the ſilk of which the web is compoſed, wound off into a ball, and think it equal to any I ever ſaw in the ſame ſtate from the ſilk worm; it is of the ſame colour, a pale yellow, or ſtraw colour. None of the gentlemen employed here have as yet made any particular obſervations upon the manner in which this animal is produced, or how they prepare their ſilk. I have found upon buſhes, on which the web has been hanging in cluſters, a thin ſhell, ſomething like

like that wherein the ſilk-worm prepares its ſilk, but of this ſhape, and, upon opening them, I have ſeen a quantity of this ſilk within, in which a ſpider was found wrapped up.

Of reptiles, there are ſnakes from the ſmalleſt ſize known in England, to the length of eleven feet, and about as thick as a man's wriſt; and many lizards of different kinds and ſizes.

The natives we have ſeen accompanied by dogs, which appear to be domeſticated the ſame as ours in Europe; they are of the wolf kind, and of a reddiſh colour. When ſpeaking of birds, I ſhould have mentioned, that ſome of our gentlemen have ſeen in the lagoons and ſwamps which they have fallen in with, in their ſhooting excurſions, the black ſwan, which is ſaid to have been found in ſome parts of the weſt coaſt of this country; the extremity of their wings are deſcribed to be white, and all the reſt of the plumage black. I have ſeen one which has been ſhot. It anſwered the above deſcription as to colour, but the bill was a pale pink or crimſon; it was about the ſize of a common white ſwan, and was good meat.

The

The vaſt variety of beautiful plants and flowers, which are to be found in this country, may hereafter afford much entertainment to the curious in the ſcience of botany; but I am wholly unqualified to deſcribe the different ſorts with which we find the woods to abound: we ſometimes met with a little wild ſpinach, parſly, and ſorrel, but in too ſmall quantities to expect it to be of any advantage to the ſeamen. The flax plant has been found here in ſeveral places, but not in any conſiderable quantity; I have heard it reckoned a good kind, but in that alſo I muſt confeſs my ignorance.

In the infancy of a diſtant ſettlement, the want of timber to carry on the neceſſary buildings will be allowed to be a very great inconvenience; but we were here in the middle of a wood, in which were trees from the ſize of a man's arm, to twenty-eight feet in circumference; but they were either ſo very crooked, ſo rent, or ſo very rotten in the heart, that we could ſcarcely get one ſound or ſerviceable in a dozen; and what in our ſituation was a very great misfortune, we had not as yet found one piece of timber that would float in water. The wood is ſo exceedingly heavy, that

that when a large tree was cut down, in order to clear a piece of ground, it would ſometimes take a party of men three or four days to diſpoſe of it, or move it from the place.

A flaſh of lightning fell one night near the camp, and ſtruck a tree cloſe to the poſt of a centinel, who was much hurt by it; the tree was greatly rent, and there being at the foot of it a pen in which were a few pigs and ſheep, they were all killed. In the middle of February, Lieutenant King of the Sirius, a maſter's mate, and ſurgeon's mate, with four other men from the ſhip, together with a few men and women convicts, embarked on board the Supply armed tender, and ſhe ſailed with them for Norfolk Iſland. In the paſſage thither, they fell in with a ſmall iſland which had not before been diſcovered, about 140 leagues to the eaſtward of this coaſt; lieutenant Ball named it Lord Howe's Iſland. After having landed the party intended to remain on Norfolk Iſland, with their proviſions and ſtores, Mr. Ball, in his return to Port Jackſon, called at Lord Howe's Iſland, in order to examine it more particularly. He found anchorage on the weſt ſide of it, but the bottom was coral rock. He landed, with

his

his boat, within a reef, and caught a number of excellent turtle upon a ſandy beach: this iſland alſo abounded with a variety of birds, which were ſo unaccuſtomed to being diſturbed, that the ſeamen came near enough to knock down as many as they wanted with ſticks.

As the two French ſhips already ſpoken of were preparing to leave this coaſt the beginning of March, I determined to viſit Monſieur de la Perouſe before he ſhould depart; I accordingly, with a few other officers, ſailed round to Botany-Bay, in the Sirius's long-boat. We ſtaid two days on board the Buſſole, and were moſt hoſpitably and politely entertained, and very much preſſed to paſs a longer time with them: when I took my leave the weather proved too ſtormy to be able to get along the coaſt in an open boat; I therefore left the long-boat on board the Buſſole, took my gun, and with another officer and two ſeamen, travelled through the woods and ſwamps, of which there were many in our route. We directed our courſe by a pocket compaſs, which led us within a mile of our own encampment; the diſtance from Botany-Bay to Port Jackſon, acroſs the land, and near the ſea ſhore, is, in a direct line, eight

or nine miles; and the country about two miles to the ſouthward of Port Jackſon abounds with high trees, and little or no underwood; but between that and Botany-Bay, it is all thick low woods or ſhrubberies, barren heaths, and ſwamps; the land near the ſea, although covered in many places with wood, is rocky from the water-ſide to the very ſummit of the hills. Whilſt walking on ſhore with the officers of the French ſhips at Botany-Bay, I was ſhewn by them a little mount upon the north ſhore, which they had diſcovered, and thought a curioſity; it was quite rocky on the top, the ſtones were all ſtanding perpendicularly on their ends, and were in long, but narrow pieces; ſome of three, four, or five ſides, exactly (in miniature) reſembling the Giants Cauſeway in the north of Ireland. The Buſſole and Aſtrolabe ſailed from Botany-Bay the 11th of March.

The ſcurvy had, for ſome time paſt, appeared more amongſt the ſeamen, marines, and convicts, than when on board the ſhips, which will appear ſtrange, after having enjoyed the advantage of being much upon the land, and eating various vegetable productions; but this the gentlemen of the faculty ſay is

no

no uncommon thing, particularly when men are under the neceſſity of continuing the ſame ſalt diet; ſetting aſide this, and a few with dyſenteries, the health of the people cannot be ſaid to be bad. About the middle of May, a convaleſcent, who had been ſent from the hoſpital to gather wild ſpinach, or other greens, was murdered by the natives; there were two of them together, the one eſcaped, but was wounded, the other has never been heard of ſince; but as ſome part of his cloaths were found which were bloody, and had been pierced by a ſpear, it was concluded he had been killed. A ſhort time after this accident, a report prevailed, that part of the bones of a man had been found near a fire by which a party of the natives had been regaling themſelves; this report gave riſe to a conjecture, that as this man had been killed near this place, the people who had committed the murder had certainly ate him. Whether any of the natives of this country are cannibals is yet a matter on which we cannot ſpeak poſitively; but the murder of two other men, as related immediately after this, ſeems to contradict the conjecture that they are cannibals, as the men were left on the

ſpot where they were killed: however, the following circumſtance may, in ſome degree, incline us to believe, that although the natives in general do not eat human fleſh, yet that that horrid cuſtom is ſometimes practiſed. I was one day preſent when two native children were interrogated on the ſubject of the quarrels of their countrymen; they were particularly aſked, what the different chiefs did with thoſe they killed; they mentioned ſome who burnt and buried the ſlain, but they alſo particularly named one who ate thoſe he killed.

Some ſhort time after the before-mentioned accident happened, two convicts who had been employed at a little diſtance up the harbour, in cutting ruſhes for thatching, were found murdered by the natives. It has been ſtrongly ſuſpected that theſe people had engaged in ſome diſpute or quarrel with them, and as they had hatchets and bill-hooks with them, it is believed they might have been raſh enough to uſe violence with ſome of the natives, who had, no doubt, been numerous there; be that as it might, the officer who went to look after thoſe unfortunate men, and to ſee what work they had done, after hailing

ing ſome time for them without any reply, ſet his boat's crew upon the ſearch, who, having found a conſiderable quantity of blood near their tent, ſuſpected what they ſoon found to be the caſe: for they diſcovered the two men immediately after, lying in different places, both dead; the one had his brains beat out with a club or ſtone, beſides ſeveral other wounds; the other had many wounds, and part of a ſpear, which had been broke, ſticking quite through his body. Their tent, proviſions, and cloaths remained, but moſt of the tools were taken away.

The 4th of June being the birth-day of our much beloved ſovereign, and the firſt we had ſeen in this moſt diſtant part of his dominions, it was celebrated by all ranks with every poſſible demonſtration of loyalty, and concluded with the utmoſt chearfulneſs and good order.

In the month of July, our ſcorbutic patients ſeemed to be rather worſe; the want of a little freſh food for the ſick was very much felt, and fiſh at this time were very ſcarce: ſuch of the natives as we met ſeemed to be in a miſerable and ſtarving condition from that ſcarcity. We frequently fell in with families

living in the hollow part of the rocks by the ſea-ſide, where they eagerly watched every opportunity of moderate weather to provide ſhell or other fiſh for their preſent ſubſiſtence: if a bird was ſhot, and thrown to them, they would immediately pluck off the feathers, put it upon the fire without taking out the inteſtines, and eat the whole; ſometimes they did not pull off the feathers, and, if it were a ſmall bird, did not even throw the bones away. This ſeaſon, in which fiſh is ſo ſcarce, ſubjects theſe poor creatures to great diſtreſs, at leaſt we were apt to believe ſo; they were frequently found gathering a kind of root in the woods, which they broiled on the fire, then beat it between two ſtones until it was quite ſoft; this they chew until they have extracted all the nutritive part, and afterwards throw it away. This root appears to be a ſpecies of the orchis, or has much of its nutritive quality. Large fires were frequently ſeen in this ſeaſon upon ſome of the hills, and we had been much at a loſs to know for what purpoſe they were ſo frequently lighted, at this time of the year; but in going down the harbour one day, with an intention to get upon the North Head, for the purpoſe of aſcertaining

ing its exact latitude, we obſerved on a hill near that point, one of thoſe large fires, which (with the firſt lieutenant and ſurgeon who were with me) we determined to viſit; and as we thought it might probably be ſome funeral ceremony, which we were very deſirous of ſeeing, we took our guns, and intended getting up amongſt them unperceived; but when we arrived at the place, to our very great diſappointment, not a perſon was to be ſeen; I believe there were not leſs than three or four acres of ground all in a blaze; we then conjectured that theſe fires were made for the purpoſe of clearing the ground of the ſhrubs and underwood, by which means they might with greater eaſe get at thoſe roots which appear to be a great part of their ſubſiſtence during the winter. We had obſerved that they generally took the advantage of windy weather for making ſuch fires, which would of courſe occaſion their ſpreading over a greater extent of ground.

On the 17th of Auguſt, the governor directed two boats from the Sirius, with a proper officer in each, to go up the harbour; one to take the north, the other the ſouth ſide; they were to enter every cove in their

way up, in order to aſcertain, as exactly as poſſible, the number of canoes and natives within the harbour of Port Jackſon; for the ſame purpoſe, two other boats went down the harbour; in one of which the governor went, and I proceeded in the other; in the lower or north part of the harbour there was a conſiderable number of canoes, ſome of which were then employed in catching fiſh. Upon my going round the coves, they all left their work, and puſhed with great precipitation for for the land, which convinced me that they were women who were thus employed; as they had always ſhewn a deſire, as much as poſſible, to avoid us. I did every thing in my power to prevent their being alarmed, or in any reſpect uneaſy, by keeping at a diſtance from them, and making every friendly ſignal I could, but to no purpoſe; for although there was no other boat in company, they did not ſeem diſpoſed to truſt us near them: there were many men upon the ſhore, who ſpoke to us in their uſual familiar and chearful manner, and invited us with much apparent earneſtneſs and friendſhip to come on ſhore, which, however, I declined, in order to proſecute the buſineſs I was engaged in; although

although I own I thought the counting them from the boat was a very uncertain method of coming at their numbers. It blew freſh, and there was ſo much ſurf on ſhore, that it was impoſſible to land where the people ſtood, without the danger of hurting the boat, otherwiſe it is probable that I, together with Lieutenant George Johnſton, of the marines, who was in the boat with me, ſhould have landed: we went as near as poſſible to the ſhore, I believe within twenty yards, and whilſt in friendly converſation with them, and lying upon our oars, we obſerved one of them place his lance upon the throwing-ſtick, but had no idea that he meant to throw it amongſt us, after ſo friendly an invitation as we had received from them to land: but I was now convinced, that they only wanted us within their reach, no doubt from an opinion that we had no fire arms, as they did not appear: as ſoon as they thought that they could throw it with effect, a lance was diſcharged, which paſſed about ſix feet over our heads; I ſaw the lance in the air, and immediately ſnatched up my gun, which, as they run off the moment they had ſhewn their hoſtile intention, I was determined to diſcharge amongſt them,

and

and ſhould probably have killed one of their number, if my gun had not miſſed fire. Mr. Johnſton, upon my gun having miſſed, immediately diſcharged his into the buſhes in which they had ſheltered themſelves from our ſight; but as it was charged only with ſmall ſhot, I think it could not have hurt any of them: what reaſon they could have had for this treacherous kind of conduct, I am wholly at a loſs to gueſs, for nothing hoſtile or miſchievous had appeared on our part; on the contrary, the moſt friendly diſpoſition had been manifeſted in every thing we ſaid or did; even when their women took the alarm upon our approach, I ſpoke to them, and made ſuch ſigns of friendſhip as we judged they would underſtand, and went round at a diſtance to prevent their apprehenſion of any inſult. It was perhaps fortunate that my gun did not go off; as I was ſo diſpleaſed at their treachery, that it is highly probable I might have ſhot one of them.

On comparing the accounts, which were taken by the different boats employed upon this buſineſs, it appeared that we had ſeen—Canoes 67—men 94—women 34—children 9,—which is by no means a juſt account of the numbers who, at that time, lived in and about

about this habour; for I have ſince ſeen in one part of the harbour more than that number.

On the 27th of Auguſt, the Supply tender arrived from Norfolk Iſland, where ſhe had been with a quantity of proviſions and ſtores for that ſettlement; ſhe brought the melancholy account of the loſs of Mr. James Cunningham, and four others, who were drowned in the ſurf, by their boat being overſet in landing the ſtores from the Supply; ſo exceedingly difficult of acceſs is the ſhore of that iſland, from an almoſt continual ſurf breaking on a reef which encompaſſes the coaſt on that part where the ſettlement is formed.

In this month a report prevailed in the ſettlement, which ſeemed at firſt to gain ſome credit:—It was, that one *Dailey*, a convict, had diſcovered a piece of ground, wherein he had found a conſiderable quantity of a yellow coloured ore, which, upon its being tried, appeared to have a certain proportion of gold in it; at this time the governor happened to be abſent on a ſhort excurſion into the country, to the northward; the report having been made to the lieutenant-governor, he of courſe examined the man, who had made the diſcovery,

diſcovery, and who told his ſtory with ſo much plauſibility, that it was not doubted but an ore of ſome kind had been found. Dailey was interrogated as to the place, but this he refuſed to give any information of until the return of the governor, to whom he would give a full account of the diſcovery, provided he would grant him what the diſcoverer conſidered as but a ſmall compenſation for ſo valuable an acquiſition; this reward was, (as there were ſhips upon the point of ſailing) his own and a particular woman convict's enlargement, and a paſſage in one of the ſhips to England, together with a ſpecified ſum of money, which I do not now recollect. The lieutenant-governor inſiſted, that as he had already mentioned the diſcovery he had made, he ſhould alſo ſhew what part of the country it was in, otherwiſe he might expect puniſhment for daring to impoſe upon thoſe officers to whom he had related this buſineſs: the fear of puniſhment diſpoſed him to incline a little, though apparently with much reluctance: he propoſed to the lieutenant-governor, that an officer ſhould be ſent down the harbour with him, for the mine, which, he ſaid, was in the lower part of the harbour,

and

and near the ſea ſhore, and he would ſhew the place to the officer: accordingly, an officer, with a corporal and two or three private ſoldiers were ſent with him; he landed where he ſaid the walk would be but ſhort, and they entered the wood in their way to the mine; ſoon after they got among the buſhes, he applied for permiſſion to go to one ſide for a minute upon ſome neceſſary occaſion, which was granted him; the officer continued there ſome hours without ſeeing the diſcoverer again, who, immediately on getting out of his ſight, had puſhed off for the camp by land, for he knew the road very well, and he had cunning enough to perſuade the officer to ſend the boat away as ſoon as they had landed, as he ſuppoſed he would not chooſe to quit the place until a good guard came down; for which purpoſe, the officer was to have diſpatched a man by land, as ſoon as he arrived at the place, and was ſatisfied that it merited attention. The convict arrived in camp pretty early in the afternoon, and informed the lieutenant-governor, that he had left the officer who went down with him in full poſſeſſion of the gold mine; he then got a few things out of his own tent, and diſappeared; the party, after waiting

waiting for ſome hours hooping and ſearching through the woods for the cheat, left their ſtations and marched round to the camp, where they arrived at duſk, heartily tired, and not a little chagrined at the trick the villain had played them. The want of proviſions ſoon brought him from his concealment, and a ſevere puniſhment was the neceſſary conſequence of this impoſition: however, he ſtill gave out, that he had made the diſcovery which he before had mentioned, and that his reaſons for quitting the officer who went with him was, that he thought, if he gave the information to the governor himſelf, he ſhould certainly get what he had aſked. When the governor returned, another officer was ſent with him, although every perſon now believed there was no truth in what he had hitherto reported. This officer informed him, in going down in the boat, that he would not ſuffer him to go three yards from him when landed, and that he would certainly ſhoot him if he attempted to run from him; for which purpoſe he ſhewed him, that he was loading his gun with ball: this ſo terrified the cheat, that he acknowledged he knew of no gold mine. He was then interrogated

reſpecting the ore which he had produced, and he confeſſed he had filed down part of a yellow metal buckle, and had mixed with it ſome gold filed off a guinea, all which had been blended with ſome earth, and made hard. The man who tried the ore was bred a ſilver-ſmith, and upon ſeparating the different parts, he diſcovered that it contained a ſmall quantity of gold: the inventer was, of courſe, well puniſhed for his trick.

CHAPTER III.

The Sirius leaves Port Jackſon.—Sails for the Cape of Good Hope, by the Eaſtern Paſſage.—Falls in with many large iſlands of ice.—Caſts anchor in Table Bay.—The ſick ſent on ſhore.—Proviſions procured for the Settlement at Port Jackſon.—Departure of the Sirius.—In great danger from a violent tempeſt.—Arrives ſafe at Port Jackſon.

IN the month of September, Governor Phillip ſignified to me, that it was his intention very ſoon to diſpatch the Sirius to the Cape

Cape of Good Hope, in order to purchaſe ſuch quantity of proviſions as ſhe might be capable of taking on board; accordingly on the 30th I received my final orders, and early in the morning of the 2d of October, we ſailed out of the harbour.

We were no ſooner clear of Port Jackſon, than the wind began to blow ſtrong, with thick, hazy, and dirty weather; and, what gave me privately a good deal of concern, the carpenter reported, that the ſhip, which had hitherto been very tight, now made water. This piece of information, with ſuch a voyage as the Sirius was now entered upon, was no doubt very unwelcome; and more particularly ſo, when it was conſidered, that the ſhip's company, from having been long upon ſalt diet, without the advantage of any ſort of vegetables, were not ſo healthy and ſtrong as a leaky ſhip might require. When this voyage, upon which we were now entered, was the ſubject of converſation, in company with the governor, he always ſpoke in favour of the paſſage round Van Diemen's land, and to the weſtward; which I confeſs I was a little ſurpriſed at, as it had never yet been attempted, not even by ſhips employed in that kind of

ſervice

ſervice which leaves it in their power to make experiments. I do not ſay that the paſſage from Van Diemen's land to the Cape of Good Hope, by the weſtward, is impracticable, but from my own experience of the prevalence of ſtrong weſterly winds acroſs that vaſt ocean, I am inclined to think it muſt be a long and tedious voyage. I therefore determined to paſs to the ſouthward of New Zealand and round Cape Horn.

We paſſed the South Cape of New Zealand on the 12th of October, but the weather being very hazy and ſqually, we did not attempt to make it. I endeavoured, in ſailing from New Zealand to Cape Horn, to keep as much as poſſible in a parallel between the tracks of the Reſolution and Adventure; ſo that if any iſland lay between the parallels in which theſe ſhips ſailed, we might have a chance of falling in with them.

We now very frequently fell in with high iſlands of ice, and were often obliged to alter our courſe to avoid them. On the 25th of November, we were drawing near Cape Horn, and in all the charts of Terra del Fuego which I had ſeen, there is an iſland laid down, bearing from the Cape about ſouth-ſouth-weſt,

and called Diego Ramirez, diſtant from the land ten or twelve leagues; and as I do not find that the exiſtence of ſuch an iſland has ever been contradicted by any perſon who has ſailed round this promontory, I determined to keep as near as poſſible in its parallel: if I ſhould make it, I could paſs either within or without, as might be convenient; and it would be as good a land-fall as the Cape itſelf, as, in caſe the wind ſhould incline to the ſouthward, we ſhould have offing enough to clear the land, which to us who were upon a ſervice that would not admit of any loſs of time, was of conſequence. At noon on the 26th, we were exactly in the parallel of Diego Ramirez; and at eight the next morning, we muſt have been very near the place in which this iſland is laid down; but as nothing appeared, we hauled in for the land, the looming of which we frequently ſaw. In the evening, Terra del Fuego was diſtant about 10 leagues. We continued our courſe north-eaſt, and I think we may ſafely venture to determine, that there is no iſland ſo ſituated from Cape Horn as this Diego Ramirez is ſaid to be.

From

From the 27th of November until the 12th of December, we had the wind conſtantly in the north-eaſt quarter, which I believe to be rather uncommon near Cape Horn for ſuch a length of time; as ſhips in general, that are bound into the ſouth ſea, find it rather tedious getting to the weſtward round this cape.

The ſhip's company now began to ſhew much diſpoſition to the ſcurvy, and what made it more diſtreſſing, we had nothing in the ſhip with which we could hope to check the progreſs of that deſtructive diſeaſe, except a little eſſence of malt, that we continued to ſerve to the ſhip's company.

On the 13th of December, in the morning, we paſſed one of the largeſt ice-iſlands we had ſeen; we judged it not leſs than three miles in length, and its perpendicular height we ſuppoſed to be 350 feet. In latitude 44° 00′ ſouth, we ſaw the laſt piece of ice, and in the whole, we had been twenty-eight days among the ice, and ſailed a diſtance of 800 leagues.

We made the Cape of Good Hope on the 1ſt of January, 1789, but were not able to get into Table Bay: however, the weakly condition of that part of the ſhip's company,

who were able to do duty upon deck, and the very dejected ſtate of thoſe who were confined to their beds, determined me, if poſſible, to bring the ſhip to an anchor before night; as the very idea of being in port, ſometimes has an exceeding good effect upon the ſpirits of people who are reduced low by the ſcurvy; accordingly we anchored within Robin's Iſland, and immediately afterwards, I ſent a boat with the firſt lieutenant on ſhore to the iſland, for ſuch news from Europe as the commanding officer there might be able to give. The officer commanding at the iſland was exceedingly civil to the lieutenant who went on ſhore, and gave him every information he could; but it was unfortunate that the one could not ſpeak a word of Engliſh, nor the other underſtand a word of Dutch. On hearing what a long voyage we had come, the officer was ſo kind as to ſend a baſket of ſuch fruit as his garden afforded; which, (to make the dejected ſick well aſſured we were really in port,) were ſent down and divided among them, for until then ſome of them very much doubted. In the morning of the 2d of January, we got under way, and ſailed up to Table Bay. As ſoon as the ſhip

was

was ſecured, I ſent an officer to wait on the governor, and to inform him of the buſineſs I was come upon: he very politely informed the officer, that there was great abundance of every thing to be had, and that I had nothing to do but to ſignify in writing the quantity of each article wanted, and directions would be immediately given reſpecting it.

Immediately after our arrival, I directed that ſick-quarters ſhould be provided for the ſick, which was done; and the invalids, to the number of forty, were landed under the care of Mr. Worgan, the ſurgeon of the ſhip. When we arrived in this bay, we had juſt twelve men in each watch, and half that number, from ſcorbutic contractions in their limbs, were not able to go aloft. Every perſon here, with whom any of the officers fell in company, ſpoke of our voyage from the eaſt coaſt of New Holland, by Cape Horn, to the Cape of Good Hope, with great ſurpriſe, not having touched at any port in our way, and having ſailed that diſtance in ninety-one days.

On the 19th of January, a ſmall Dutch frigate arrived here from Batavia; from which I learned, that Lieutenant Shortland had ar-

rived at that port with a ſingle ſhip, about the beginning of December, in a very diſtreſſed condition; that he had buried the greateſt part of the ſhip's company, and was aſſiſted by the officers and company of the above frigate to ſecure his veſſel and hand the ſails, which he could not have done without aſſiſtance; and that he had been reduced to the neceſſity, ſome time before he arrived, to ſink the other veſſel which was in company with him, for the purpoſe of manning one out of the remaining part of the two ſhip's companies; without which, he never could have reached Batavia with either: for when he arrived there, he had only four men out of the two crews, who were capable of ſtanding on the deck. I was now particularly anxious for the arrival of Mr. Shortland at the Cape, that I might have ſomething more authentic than theſe reports to give Governor Phillip, on my return to Port Jackſon.

On the 18th of February, to my no ſmall ſatisfaction, (for I was preparing to ſail the next day,) Mr. Shortland arrived in the Alexander tranſport. I was going off from the ſhore, when I diſcovered the ſhip coming round Green Point; I rowed directly on board,

board, and his people were ſo happy to ſee their old friends in Table Bay, that they cheered us as we came along-ſide. I now received from Mr. Shortland an exact confirmation of all the intelligence which I had received concerning him from the officers of the Dutch frigate.

On the 20th of February, I ſailed from Table-Bay, after having taken on board twelve months proviſions for the ſhip's company; and, in addition, about ſix months flour for the whole ſettlement; together with various ſtores for the colony, and many private articles for the different officers, &c. &c. in ſhort, the ſhip's hold, between decks, every officer's apartment, and all the ſtore-rooms were completely filled.

After we left the Cape of Good Hope, we had, for three weeks, ſtrong gales from the ſouthward, with ſqually diſagreeable weather: we did not meet with weſterly winds ſo ſoon as we had done the laſt time we made this paſſage.

On the 20th of April, the wind increaſed to a very violent gale from the ſouthward; we were now in latitude 44° 29′ ſouth, by account, and longitude 144° 30′ eaſt: being ſo near Van Diemen's Land, and ſo well to the

ſouthward as I ſuppoſed we were, I had no doubt of being able to croſs it, and, availing myſelf of this ſoutherly wind, to run along the coaſt to the northward, and reach Port Jackſon in a few days; but as we drew near the meridian of the ſouth cape, the gale increaſed to a mere tempeſt, attended with thick hazy weather, and a moſt aſtoniſhing high ſea.

At day-light on the morning of the 21ſt, the fore, main, and mizzen ſtay-ſails were all ſplit by the violence of the wind; by this accident we were reduced to the reefed fore-ſail and balanced mizzen; and for ſome time we were under the neceſſity of handing the fore-ſail, the gale ſtill continuing to increaſe rather than abate; and inclining to the eaſtward of ſouth, was, in our ſituation, at this time particularly unfortunate: for we were now ſo far advanced to the eaſtward as to hope that in a few hours we ſhould have been able to have made a fair wind of it, if it had continued to the ſouthward. It may not be improper here to obſerve, that three days had now elapſed without a ſight of the ſun during the day, or a ſtar during the night, from which we could *exactly* determine our latitude; but as every allowance had been made

made for the drifting of the ſhip to leeward, under a very low ſail, and an exceeding heavy ſea, and for every other diſadvantage attending ſuch a ſituation; there remained not a doubt with me, or any officer on board, but that we were near half a degree to the ſouthward of the ſouth cape; and as the diſtance from weſt to eaſt, acroſs this promontory, is not more than a degree and a half of longitude, we had every reaſon to think we were near round it; but at half paſt three in the afternoon it cleared a little in the horizon, and we ſaw the land bearing eaſt; the haze was ſuch that we could not well gueſs the diſtance, but it was very near; on this we wore the ſhip immediately, and ſtood to the weſtward: the wind had now got to ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, but continued to blow with great violence, the ſhip upon this tack lying up ſouth-weſt, we ſet the reefed-mainſail, and at half paſt ſix we ſaw the land again, through the haze cloſe under our lee bow, and the ſea breaking with prodigious force upon it: it was impoſſible to weather it; therefore we wore the ſhip immediately, while there was a chance of having room for doing ſo. I now found that we were embayed, and the gale not in the leaſt likely to abate, the ſea running

mountain

mountain high, with very thick weather, a a long dark night juſt coming on, and an unknown coaſt I may call it, cloſe under our lee; nothing was now left to be done but to carry every yard of canvaſs the ſhip was capable of bearing, and for every perſon on board to conſtantly keep the deck, and attentively to look out under the lee for the land, and as often as it might be diſcovered, to wear, and lay the ſhip's head the other way: but as we knew not what bay, or part of the coaſt we were upon, nor what dangerous ledges of rocks might be detached ſome diſtance from the ſhore, and in our way; we had every moment reaſon to fear that the next might, by the ſhip ſtriking, launch the whole of us into eternity. Our ſituation was ſuch that not a man could have eſcaped to have told where the reſt ſuffered: however, whatever might have been the private feelings of each individual, I never ſaw orders executed with more alacrity in any ſituation: every officer and man took his ſtation for the look-out; and, the ſhip being wore to the eaſtward, notwithſtanding the ſtrength of the gale, the cloſe reefed fore and main top-ſails were ſet over the reefed courſes. Fortunately at this inſtant

inſtant the wind favoured us near two points, and the ſhip lay better up upon this tack, than her courſe upon the other had promiſed, but ſtill the weather was ſo thick, the ſea ſo high, the gale ſo ſtrong, and ſo dead upon the ſhore, that little hope could be entertained of our weathering the land. We ſtood on to the eaſtward, and the ſhip, to my aſtoniſhment, as well as to that of every perſon on board, bore ſuch a preſs of ſail wonderfully.

We had about midnight, run back the diſtance made from the firſt land we ſaw to the ſecond, and perceived, through the haze, the looming of that land under our lee, nearly on the beam; this advantage we had gained by the ſhifting of the wind two points: we now ſtood on, and I had hopes that this might be the moſt projecting land; but at two in the afternoon, as I was looking from the quarter deck very anxiouſly to leeward, I obſerved the looming of a high and very ſteep point of rocky land, and the ſea foaming with frightful violence againſt it. I made no mention of it; but juſt at that inſtant it was diſcovered by the ſailors ſtationed forward, and they called out, "Land, cloſe under our lee;" I replied it was very

well, I had ſeen it ſome time, and that as it now upon our beam (which it really was, for I diſcovered it through the main ſhrouds) there could be no danger from it, we ſhould ſoon paſs it: if this land had been ſeen a little ſooner, the fear of not being able to weather it might have occaſioned our wearing, which would have been unfortunate, as the weather juſt cleared up at a time when we could ſee that no danger was to be apprehended from it. The ſhip was at this time half buried in the ſea by the preſs of ſail, ſince ſhe was going through it at the rate of four knots. We ſoon ſhot paſt this head, and from the courſe we had made, I was convinced it was Taſman's Head, which is the eaſtern point of a bay, of which the ſouth cape is the weſtern, and was called by Taſman, *Storm-Bay*. After paſſing Taſman's Head, we kept our wind ſtill, and carried ſail, in order, if poſſible, to weather Maria's Iſlands, which lay about ſix leagues to the north-eaſt, for we had no ſooner got round the laſt head, than the wind headed us, and we fell off from eaſt by ſouth to eaſt by north; had this change taken place a little ſooner, it muſt have proved fatal to us. At eight the next morning, we paſſed to the windward

windward of Maria's Iſlands, which, from the hazineſs of the weather, we did not ſee until they were upon the lee quarter. In this trying ſituation, the ſhip being leaky, our pumps during ſuch a night were a diſtreſſing tax upon us; as they were kept conſtantly at work. I do not recollect to have heard of a more wonderful eſcape. Every thing which depended upon us, I believe, was done; but it would be the higheſt preſumption and ingratitude to Divine Providence, were we to attribute our preſervation wholly to our beſt endeavours: his interference in our favour was ſo very conſpicuouſly manifeſted in various inſtances, in the courſe of that night, as I believe not to leave a ſhadow of doubt, even in the minds of the moſt profligate on board, of his immediate aſſiſtance!

After having weathered Maria's Iſlands, we continued to ſtand on with a preſs of ſail to the eaſtward, for I was anxious to gain an offing from the coaſt, the ſhip being exceeding diſabled.

We were no ſooner to the eaſtward of Maria's Iſlands, than the wind ſhifted round to ſouth-eaſt and eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, which brought

us

us again upon a lee ſhore, for we could not weather Maria's Iſlands upon one tack, nor Shooten's Iſles and Bay of ſhoals upon the other; however, as it did not now blow ſo hard, and the land was near 20 leagues diſtant, I was not under any apprenſion from it. Nothing material happened until we made Port Jackſon, where we arrived on the 8th of May, and anchored in Sydney Cove in the evening of the 9th, after an abſence of 219 days, 51 of which we lay in Table Bay, Cape of Good Hope: ſo that, although during this voyage we had fairly gone round the world, we had only been 168 days in deſcribing that circle; and, by taking a mean of the higheſt and loweſt latitudes we ſailed in, we ſhall find our track nearly in latitude 45° ſouth.

CHAPTER IV.

The ſmall-pox makes its appearance among the natives.—Its fatal effects.—A criminal court held.—Six marines tried and convicted.—Governor Phillip viſits Broken-bay.—Explores its various inlets.—Returns to Port Jackſon.—Two natives brought to the ſettlement, and kindly treated.—One of them makes his eſcape.

AS ſoon as the ſhip was ſecured, I went on ſhore to wait on the governor, whom I found in good health; he was ſitting by the fire, drinking tea with a few friends; among whom I obſerved a native man of this country, who was decently cloathed, and ſeemed to be as much at his eaſe at the tea-table as any perſon there; he managed his cup and ſaucer as well, as though he had been been long accuſtomed to ſuch entertainment. This man was taken from his friends, by force, by Lieutenant Ball, of the Supply, and Lieutenant George Johnſon, of the marines, who were ſent down the harbour with two boats for that purpoſe; the governor having

having found that no encouragement he could give the natives, would diſpoſe them to viſit the ſettlement of their own accord: this method he had therefore determined upon, to get one man into his poſſeſſion, who, by kind treatment, might hereafter be the means of diſpoſing his countrymen to place more confidence in us. This man, whoſe name was *Ara-ba-noo*, was taken, as I have already ſaid, by force, and in the following manner. After having been a ſhort time in converſation with ſome of the gentlemen, one of the ſeamen, who had been previouſly directed, threw a rope round his neck, and dragged him in a moment down to the boat; his cries brought a number of his friends into the ſkirts of the wood, from whence they threw many lances, but without effect. The terror this poor wretch ſuffered, can better be conceived than expreſſed; he believed he was to be immediately murdered; but, upon the officers coming into the boat, they removed the rope from his neck to his leg, and treated him with ſo much kindneſs, that he became a little more chearful. He was for ſome time after his arrival at the governor's houſe, ornamented with an iron ſhackle about his leg,

to

to prevent his being able to effect his eſcape with eaſe; this he was taught to conſider as *bang-ally*, which is the name given in their language to every decoration; and he might well believe it a compliment paid to him, becauſe it was no uncommon thing for him to ſee ſeveral of the moſt worthleſs of the convicts, who had merited puniſhment every day ſhackled like him; the cauſe of which he could not of courſe underſtand. However, he was ſoon reconciled to his ſituation, by the very kind treatment he received from every perſon about him, and the iron growing uneaſy, it was taken off, and he was allowed to go where he pleaſed. He very ſoon learnt the names of the different gentlemen who took notice of him, and when I was made acquainted with him, he learnt mine, which he never forgot, but expreſſed great deſire to come on board my *nowee*; which is their expreſſion for a boat or other veſſel upon the water. The day after I came in, the governor and his family did me the honour to dine on board, when I was alſo favoured with the company of *Ara-ba-noo*, whom I found to be a very good-natured talkative fellow; he was about thirty years of

age, and tolerably well looked. I expreſſed, when at the governor's, much ſurpriſe, at not having ſeen a ſingle native on the ſhore, or a canoe as we came up in the ſhip; the reaſon of which I could not comprehend, until I was informed that the ſmall-pox had made its appearance, a few months ago, amongſt theſe unfortunate creatures, and that it was truly ſhocking to go round the coves of this harbour, which were formerly ſo much frequented by the natives; where, in the caves of the rocks, which uſed to ſhelter whole families in bad weather, were now to be ſeen men, women, and children, lying dead. As we had never yet ſeen any of theſe people who have been in the ſmalleſt degree marked with the ſmall-pox, we had reaſon to ſuppoſe they have never before now been affected by it, and conſequently are ſtrangers to any method of treating it: and, if we conſider the various attitudes, which the different dead bodies have been found in, we may eaſily believe, that when any of them are taken ill, and the malady aſſumes the appearance of the ſmall-pox, (having already experienced its fatality to whole families,) they are immediately deſerted by their friends, and left

left to periſh, in their helpleſs ſituation, for want of ſuſtenance. Some have been found ſitting on their haunches, with their heads reclined between their knees; others were leaning againſt a rock, with their head reſting upon it: I have ſeen myſelf, a woman ſitting on the ground, with her knees drawn up to her ſhoulders, and her face reſting on the ſand between her feet. Two children, a boy of ſix or ſeven years of age, and a girl about ten, were lately picked up, labouring under the ſame diſeaſe; two old men, whom we had reaſon to believe were the fathers of the two children, were picked up at the ſame time, and brought to the hoſpital, and much care taken of them: the two men lived but a few days, but the children both recovered, and ſeemed well ſatisfied with their *very comfortable ſituation*. Five or ſix days after my arrival, poor Ara-ba-noo was ſeized with the ſmall-pox, and although every poſſible means for his recovery were uſed, he lived only till the criſis of the diſeaſe. Every perſon in the ſettlement was much concerned for the loſs of this man.

Several people had been loſt in the woods during our abſence, and had either been killed

by the natives, or periſhed there. Another melancholy piece of information which we received on our arrival, was, that ſix marines had been tried by a criminal court, and found guilty of robbing the public ſtores: they were ſentenced to death, and executed accordingly. It appeared upon the trial of theſe infatuated men, that they had carried on this iniquitous, (and I may add from our ſituation dangerous) practice to the ſettlement at large, for ſeveral months; and all originally occaſioned by ſome unfortunate connections they had made with women convicts. The ſettlement had been, during our abſence, remarkably healthy.

Before the Sirius ſailed from Port Jackſon, the governor had determined to ſend a detachment of the marines, with a conſiderable number of convicts, for the purpoſe of clearing as much as might be neceſſary, and preparing a tract of land at the head of this harbour, in order to ſow corn. When we returned from our voyage, I went up to ſee what progreſs was made at this farm, which had been named Roſe Hill: it certainly very much exceeded my expectations; the quantity of ground prepared for receiving grain at the

proper

proper time, was conſiderable; a number of huts were built, the gardens were in tolerable appearance, and there was altogether every proſpect, in due time, of a very extenſive farm; and we knew that if there were people enough to labour, it might be carried at leaſt twenty miles to the weſtward, and every foot of the ground apparently as good as that on which they were now at work.

On the 6th of June, I was engaged in a party, with the governor, on a viſit to Broken-Bay, in order to examine ſome part of that harbour which had not been (for want of time and opportunity) noticed in his laſt viſit to that place; two boats were diſpatched under the care of Mr. Keltie, maſter of the Sirius, with proviſions, &c. And the party, which conſiſted of the governor, Captain Collins (the judge-advocate), Captain Johnſton of the marines, Mr. White principal ſurgeon of the ſettlement, Mr. Worgan, Mr. Fowell, and myſelf, from the Sirius, and two men all armed with muſquets, &c. We landed on the north part of Port Jackſon, and proceeded along the ſea coaſt to the northward; in the courſe of our march, we had many long ſandy beaches to croſs, which was a very fatiguing

part of the journey: when we aſcended the hills, we had frequently thick woods to paſs through, but as we often fell in with paths, which the natives in travelling along the coaſt had trod very well down; theſe paths rendered our march, not only on account of pointing to us the moſt eaſy and acceſſible parts of the hills and woods, but, in point of direction, the ſhorteſt which could be found, if we had even been better acquainted with this tract. We left Port Jackſon at ſix o'clock in the morning, juſt as the day was dawning, and arrived at the ſouth branch of Broken-Bay at three in the afternoon, after a pretty warm and fatiguing journey, loaded as we were with proviſions for ſeveral days, water, and ammunition: when we arrived at the water-ſide, we found our boats, which had left Port Jackſon at midnight, were ſafely arrived. As it was now too late in the day, and we were all too much fatigued to attempt any part of the main buſineſs upon which we came here, we pitched our tents, and hauled the ſeine for fiſh, and being ſucceſsful, we ſat down to regale ourſelves on freſh fiſh and ſalt beef, and reſted the remainder of the day. In the courſe of the little excurſions of our

boats'

boats' crews this afternoon, a native woman was diſcovered, concealing herſelf from our ſight in the long graſs, which was at this time very wet, and I ſhould have thought very uncomfortable to a poor naked creature. She had, before the arrival of our boats at this beach, been, with ſome of her friends, employed in fiſhing for their daily food, but were upon their approach alarmed, and they had all made their eſcape, except this miſerable girl, who had juſt recovered from the ſmall-pox, and was very weak, and unable, from a ſwelling in one of her knees, to get off to any diſtance: ſhe therefore crept off, and concealed herſelf in the beſt manner ſhe could among the graſs, not twenty yards from the ſpot on which we had placed our tents. She was diſcovered by ſome perſon, who having fired at and ſhot a hawk from a tree right over her, terrified her ſo much that ſhe cried out and diſcovered herſelf. Information was immediately brought to the governor, and we all went to ſee this unhappy girl, whom we found, as I have already obſerved, juſt recovered from the ſmall-pox, and lame: ſhe appeared to be about 17 or 18 years of age, and had covered her debilitated and naked

body with the wet graſs, having no other means of hiding herſelf; ſhe was very much frightened on our approaching her, and ſhed many tears, with piteous lamentations: we underſtood none of her expreſſions, but felt much concern at the diſtreſs ſhe ſeemed to ſuffer; we endeavoured all in our power to make her eaſy, and with the aſſiſtance of a few expreſſions which has been collected from poor Ara-ba-noo while he was alive, we ſoothed her diſtreſs a little, and the ſailors were immediately ordered to bring up ſome fire, which we placed before her: we pulled ſome graſs, dried it by the fire, and ſpread round her to keep her warm; then we ſhot ſome birds, ſuch as hawks, crows, and gulls, ſkinned them, and laid them on the fire to broil, together with ſome fiſh, which ſhe eat; we then gave her water, of which ſhe ſeemed to be much in want, for when the word *Baa-do* was mentioned, which is their expreſſion for water, ſhe put her tongue out to ſhew how very dry her mouth was; and indeed from its appearance and colour, ſhe had a conſiderable degree of fever on her. Before we retired to reſt for the night, we ſaw her again, and got ſome fire-wood laid within her

her reach, with which ſhe might, in the courſe of the night, recruit her fire; we alſo cut a large quantity of graſs, dried it, covered her well, and left her to her repoſe, which, from her ſituation, I conjecture was not very comfortable or refreſhing. Next morning we viſited her again; ſhe had now got pretty much the better of her fears, and frequently called to her friends, who had left her, and who, we knew, could be at no great diſtance from her; ſhe repeated their names in a very loud and ſhrill voice, and with much apparent anxiety and concern for the little notice they took of her intreaties to return: for we imagined, in all ſhe ſaid when calling on them, ſhe was informing them, that the ſtrangers were not enemies, but friends; however, all her endeavours to bring them back were ineffectual, while we remained with her; but we were no ſooner gone from the beach, than we ſaw ſome of them come out of the wood; and as there were two canoes on the ſhore belonging to this party, they launched one into the water and went away.

We employed this day in going up the ſouth branch, which the governor named Pitt

Pitt Water, and ſo much of the day was ſpent in examining it, that when we returned down near the place where we had paſſed the laſt night, it was thought too late to proceed farther; we therefore encamped on the ſame ſpot. Our tents were no ſooner up, than we went to viſit our young female friend, whom we found in a little bark hut upon the beach; this hut was the place in which ſhe and her friends were enjoying themſelves, when the arrival of our boat alarmed them. She was not alone, as before, but had with her a female child, about two years old, and as fine a little infant of that age as I ever ſaw; but upon our approach (the night being cold and rainy, and the child terrified exceedingly) ſhe was lying with her elbows and knees on the ground, covering the child from our ſight with her body, or probably ſheltering it from the weather, but I rather think on account of its fears: on our ſpeaking to her, ſhe raiſed herſelf up, and ſat on the ground with her knees up to her chin, and her heels under her, and was at that moment, I think, the moſt miſerable ſpectacle in the human ſhape I ever beheld. (See the Vignette in the title page.) The little infant could not

be

be prevailed on to look up; it lay with its face upon the ground, and one hand covering its eyes. We ſupplied her, as before, with birds, fiſh, and fuel, and pulled a quantity of graſs to make her a comfortable bed, and covered her little miſerable hut ſo as to keep out the weather: ſhe was now ſo reconciled to our frequent viſits, ſeeing we had nothing in view but her comfort in them, that when ſhe wanted *baa-do*, or *ma-gra*, which ſignifies fiſh, ſhe would aſk for them, and when ſhe did, it was always ſupplied her: in the morning we viſited her again; the child had now got ſo much the better of its fears, that it would allow us to take hold of its hand; I perceived, that young as it was, it had loſt the two firſt joints of its little finger, of the left hand, the reaſon or meaning of which we had not yet been able to learn.

We gave her all the fiſh we had remaining, and having put a quantity of fire-wood and water within her reach, we took our leave. We embarked in the boats, and ſailed acroſs the bay to the north branch, which has a very ſhoally and narrow entrance. We proceeded but a ſmall diſtance up, before we landed on the weſt ſhore and refreſhed ourſelves;

ſelves; after which we rowed round the firſt opening on the eaſt ſide; this we followed up until we came to its head. It is very ſhallow and narrow, and ended in a large baſon, full of ſhoals, and ſurrounded with mangroves; it extended near four miles to the north and eaſtward; when we returned from this branch we pitched our tents on the weſt ſhore for the night, and early the next morning we proceeded to the northward: in this route we fell in with many ſhoals of conſiderable extent; and after rowing about ſix or ſeven miles up, we arrived at the head of it, which divides into two large bays, in one of which I obſerved the latitude to be 33° 26′ 30″ ſouth. We returned from hence to a point near the entrance of this north harbour, where we encamped and ſpent the night; in this harbour we did not ſee more than twenty natives, ſome few of whom came and converſed with us. We afterwards proceeded up about a mile and a half to an iſland we had viſited the laſt winter. Here we encamped for the night, and hauled the ſeine with great ſucceſs; and from the vaſt quantity of excellent mullet and other fiſh caught here, it got the name of Mullet Iſland. Next morning we

rowed

rowed into a branch, which the boats had been in the laſt time we were here, but had not thoroughly examined; we proceeded to the top, and found it very ſhoally, extending to the northward about four miles, and navigable only for boats, having but four, five, and ſix feet water in it. After having ſatisfied ourſelves as to the extent of this arm, we returned to Mullet Iſland, where we caught fiſh, and dined: in the afternoon, the governor and myſelf went in one of the boats, leaving the reſt of the party with the tents on Mullet Iſland; we entered another branch which had alſo been ſeen laſt winter, but was not examined; we rowed up this about ſeven or eight miles, until it became ſo very narrow and ſhoally, having ſcarcely water enough to float the boat, or room to uſe the oars, that we thought it was not worth proſecuting any farther diſcovery at the riſk of grounding the boat, and being left during the night; we therefore returned to Mullet Iſland, and ſpent another night upon it.

The next morning we ſtruck our tents and proceeded, in the boats, to examine a point of high land, which, from our ſituation in the boat the day before, had the appearance of

of an iſland; of this we were determined to be ſatisfied, and we found it to be an iſland as we had conjectured. In examining this, we were led into a branch which had not before been diſcovered: we proceeded up this for a conſiderable diſtance, found good depth of water, and every other appearance of its being the opening of an extenſive river: we continued to row up in it the whole of this day, and in the evening we went on ſhore, on the moſt commodious ſpot we could find, which was a low marſhy point. Here we raiſed our tents, and ſpent the night: at day-light in the morning it was ſo foggy, that we were obliged to defer our departure from this ſituation until ten o'clock, when the influence of the ſun diſpelled the miſt, and we continued our courſe upwards, ſtill finding good depth of water and ſtrong tides; both which we conſidered as indications of a conſiderable river. The whole of this day was employed in exploring and making what progreſs we could; the ebb tides we obſerved thus far up were conſiderably ſtronger than the floods, and the water had very little the taſte of ſea water; indeed, it ſcarcely could be called brackiſh. We continued going up until the evening, when

when it was found impoſſible, at this time, to make any farther diſcovery; our proviſions being nearly expended: we filled our water-caſks, where we gave up the purſuit, and there, although the tide was high, the water was perfectly freſh. The general depth of this river was from three to ſeven fathoms, and its breadth was from 100 to 300 fathoms. Its general direction, as far as we were up, is to the north-weſt. We were, when fartheſt up, about twenty miles from the entrance of the ſouth-weſt arm of Broken-Bay. The banks of the river, on the loweſt part, had many mangrove trees along it; higher up, reeds grew along its margin, and behind theſe reedy banks were immenſe perpendicular hills of barren, rocky lands, with trees growing from between the rocky cliffs; the depth of the river, when we were higheſt up, was ſix and ſeven fathoms. We were ſo anxious to proſecute this diſcovery, that we did not think of returning until it was near dark; and in our preſent ſituation, there was not a ſpot on which we could erect a tent, ſo very ſteep were the ſhores, except where they were marſhy. We puſhed down as faſt as poſſible, in order to find a landing-place, before it ſhould

ſhould be very late; and ſoon after dark, we put a-ſhore on a parcel of rocks, which was, indeed, the only ſpot near on which we could find room for our tents, and here we paſſed the night. The morning of the next day was again foggy, until the ſun had ſufficient power to diſperſe it; we then returned down the river, and as the wind was fair, and blew freſh, we ſailed down, and in the afternoon arrived in the ſouth branch, or Pitt-Water, fixed our tents for the evening, and caught ſome fiſh, in order to ſpin out our proviſions. Our female friend had left this place.

The governor was now determined to return as faſt as poſſible to Port Jackſon, and, after reſting a few days, to proſecute this ufeful diſcovery to its ſource. We ſtruck the tents at night, and embarked them in the boats; for, as the wind was northerly, it was intended they ſhould ſail at midnight; a wigwam was made to ſhelter us during the night, and a large fire before it, by which we lay till day-light. The boats having ſailed in the night, we ſet off at dawn of day in the morning by land; we found an eaſier path than that by which we came, and arrived at the north cove of Port Jackſon by two in the afternoon,

afternoon, where the boats were already arrived. In our journey we fell in with ſeveral dead bodies, who had probably fallen by the ſmall-pox, but they were mere ſkeletons, ſo that it was impoſſible to ſay of what diſeaſe they died.

Boats were upon our arrival immediately ordered to be prepared, and proviſions got ready for another excurſion, the ſame party being engaged to go again, and, if poſſible, trace this river to its ſource.

On Sunday the 28th of June, the boats being ready, proviſions embarked, and the wind fair for another viſit to Broken-Bay, they ſailed before day-light on Monday morning; the party engaged to go by land were put on ſhore at the north part of the harbour at ſix o'clock; the ſame gentlemen who were on the former expedition were on this alſo, and an addition of five marines; on the whole, our numbers amounted to about forty, including thoſe in the boats: we were all well armed, and capable of making a powerful reſiſtance, in caſe, as we advanced up the river, we ſhould find the interior parts of the country well inhabited, and the people hoſtile.

Having, on our laſt expedition, found a good track to travel by, we were ſoon in the neighbourhood of the ſouth branch of Broken-Bay, at which place one boat had been ordered to meet us, in order to ſave us by much the worſt part of the journey. We arrived at the head of Pitt-Water before eleven o'clock, but no boat appeared, which obliged us to walk round all the bays, woods, and ſwamps, between the head and entrance of this branch; by which, when we joined the boats, we were exceedingly fatigued; the weather being rather warm, and each perſon having his knapſack and arms to carry, this laſt part of our journey increaſed the diſtance from twelve or fourteen miles to about twenty-five; in the courſe of which we had very high and ſteep hills to climb, and many deep ſwamps to wade through: by the time we joined the boats the day was too far advanced to think of proceeding any farther, we therefore pitched the tents, and occupied the ſpot which we had formerly done when here.

On Tueſday the 30th, we embarked in the boats at day-break, intending to reach as high up this day as poſſible; we paſſed Mullet

let Iſland, and proceeded into the river, and before night, we had advanced as far up as a point on which we had reſted a night the laſt time we were here, and which was within three or four miles of the place, where we left off the purſuit: here we ſlept for the night, and at day-light on the 1ſt of July we embarked, and after advancing a very little way beyond our fartheſt diſcovery, the river divided into two branches, one leading to the north-weſt, the other to the ſouthward; we took that which led to the north-weſt, and continued all day rowing up this arm, which was in general ſhoal water, from four to ten and twelve feet, and its breadth from about 20 to 40 fathoms; the banks of this branch were in general immenſe perpendicular mountains of barren rock; in ſome places the mountains did not reach the margin of the river, but fell back a little way from it, and were joined by low marſhy points, covered with reeds or ruſhes, which extended from the foot of the mountains to the edge of the river. At five in the evening, we put on ſhore, and raiſed our tents at the foot of one of the mountains, where we found a tolerable dry ſpot for that purpoſe; and in the

morning of the 2d, we proceeded higher up, but this morning's progreſs was a good deal retarded by many large trees having fallen from the banks, and which reached almoſt acroſs the river; for here it was ſo narrow, that it hardly deſerved that name: by ten o'clock we were ſo far up, that we had not room for the oars, nor indeed water to float the boats: we therefore found it neceſſary to return, and before noon we put on ſhore, where I took the meridian altitude of the ſun, which gave our latitude 33° 21′ ſouth, and we judged that we were about thirty-four miles above Mullet Iſland. At the place where we paſſed the laſt night we were examining the ground round us, as was cuſtomary wherever we placed our tents for the night; and about half a mile diſtant, ſome of the gentlemen found a ſmall hut; they ſaw a perſon whom they took for a native woman, and who, upon our approach, fled with great precipitation into the woods. They went to examine the hut, and found two ſmall helpleſs children in it; the poor little creatures were terribly frightened, but upon their being kindly treated, they ſeemed to recover a little from their fear. They appeared

appeared to be in great diſtreſs, apparently for want of food; they had a little fire by them, and in it was found a few wild yams, about the ſize of a walnut: upon a ſuppoſition that the parents of theſe children would ſoon return, after our leaving the place, a hatchet and ſome other trifles were left in the hut. Next morning, while the people were employed in ſtriking the tents, ſome of the gentlemen again viſited the hut which they now found unoccupied; the whole family were gone, and the hatchet, &c. were left lying by it. It is really wonderful, that theſe people ſhould ſet ſo little value upon ſuch an uſeful article as an axe certainly muſt be to them; this indifference I have frequently ſeen in thoſe who have been ſhewn the uſe of it, and even when its ſuperiority over their ſtone hatchets has been pointed out by a compariſon. About ſix o'clock in the evening we entered the ſouthern branch, and very ſoon after encamped for the night. The next morning (Friday 3d) we proceeded up this arm for about ſeven or eight miles, where it again divided into two branches; thus far we found the depth from three to nine fathoms, and the breadth of the river

from 100 to 150 fathoms; we took the branch which led to the northward, (the other went to the ſouthward) but we had not advanced more than a quarter of a mile before we found the water very ſhoally; however, as it might lead to a good country, the governor determined to go as high as the boats could find water; we went through various windings, and met with many difficulties from the ſhoallyneſs of the water: notwithſtanding which, we made ſhift to get about 13 miles up; the depth was from four to twelve feet, and the breadth from 20 to 50 fathoms; the banks of this branch were the ſame as the laſt, high, ſteep, and rocky mountains, with many trees growing down their ſides, from between the rocks, where no one would believe there could be any ſoil to nouriſh them. Both this and the laſt branch we examined, probably extend many miles farther than we with our boats could trace them, but they did not appear, where we left off the examination of them, to be navigable for any veſſel but the canoes of the natives, which do not draw more than two or three inches water. We ſaw ſeveral natives in theſe branches, but they fled into the woods

woods on our approach: the wretched condition of the miſerable natives who have taken up their reſidence, for a time, ſo far back from the ſea coaſt, where no fiſh are to be had, is far beyond my deſcription; they, no doubt, have methods of ſnaring or killing the different kinds of animals which are to be found here, otherwiſe I think it impoſſible they could exiſt at any diſtance from the ſea: for the land, as far as we yet know, affords very little ſuſtenance for the human race. Having advanced as far as poſſible with the boats, we returned, and after rowing two or three miles down to a point where there was tolerable landing, we put a-ſhore, and pitched the tents for the night. In the morning of the 4th, while the tents were putting into the boats, I meaſured the height of the oppoſite ſhore, which I found to be 250 feet perpendicular above the level of the river, which was here 30 fathoms wide: at ſeven o'clock we embarked, and rowed down until we came to the entrance of the ſecond ſouthern branch, where we found a good depth of water, in ſix and ſeven fathoms. This from its depth, encouraged us to hope that it might extend a great diſtance to the

weſtward: we went up this branch about 13 or 14 miles before we put on ſhore for the night: in this diſtance, the general depth of water was from two to ſeven fathoms, and the breadth of the river from 70 to 140 fathoms; but the country ſtill wore a very unpromiſing aſpect, being either high rocky ſhores, or low marſhy points. After having reſted for the night, we were again under way at day-light, and this day advanced about fourteen miles againſt the tide. In the woods we frequently ſaw fires, and ſometimes heard the natives; in the afternoon we ſaw a conſiderable number of people in the wood, with many fires in different places; we called to them in their own manner, by frequently repeating the word *Co-wee*, which ſignifies, come here; at laſt, two men came to the water-ſide with much apparent familiarity and confidence: I thought, from this circumſtance, that they had certainly ſeen us before, either at Botany-Bay, Port Jackſon, or Broken-Bay; they received a hatchet, and a wild duck, which had been juſt before ſhot from the boat; and in return, they threw us a ſmall coil of line, made of the hair of ſome animal, and

alſo

alſo offered a ſpear, which was refuſed. The only argument againſt their having ſeen us before is, that they were the firſt we had met with who appeared deſirous of making a return for any preſent they received.

Here the banks of the river are low, and covered with what we call the pine-trees of this country; which indeed have received that name merely from the leaf, which is a good deal like the pine, but the wood is very different. The natives here, appear to live chiefly on the roots which they dig from the ground; for theſe low banks appear to have been ploughed up, as if a vaſt herd of ſwine had been living on them. We put on ſhore, and examined the places which had been dug, and found the wild yam in conſiderable quantities, but in general very ſmall, not larger than a walnut; they appeared to be in the greateſt plenty on the banks of the river; a little way back they were ſcarce.

At five in the evening, we put aſhore at the foot of a hill, where we paſſed the night; and at day-light in the morning of the 5th, we embarked, and continued our way up the river; in which we ſtill found good depth of water, from two to five fathoms, and 60 or 70 fa-

70 fathoms wide. As we advanced, we found the river to contract very faſt in its breadth, and the channel became ſhoaler; from theſe circumſtances, we had reaſon to believe that we were not far from its ſource: the ebb tides were pretty ſtrong, but the floods were only perceptible by the ſwelling of the water. In the evening we arrived at the foot of a high mountain, which was ſpread over with lofty trees, without any underwood; here we ſaw a pleaſant looking country, covered with graſs, and without that mixture of rocky patches in every acre or two, as is common in many other places: we aſcended ſome diſtance, and erected our tents for the night. The river here is not more than twenty fathoms wide. In the night, when every thing was ſtill, we heard diſtinctly the roaring of what we judged to be a fall of water; and imagined from this circumſtance, that we ſhould not be able to advance much farther. In the morning, we walked to the top of the hill, and found we were not more than five or ſix miles from a long range of mountains, between which, and that where we ſtood, there is a deep valley, or low country, through which, probably,

bably, a branch of this river may run. This range of mountains we ſuppoſed to be thoſe which are ſeen from Port Jackſon, and called the Blue Mountains: they limit the ſight to the weſt-north-weſt. In that range of high land there is a remarkable gully, or chaſm, which is ſeen diſtinctly at a diſtance, and from which we appeared to be diſtant about five miles. The hills on each ſide of this gap were named by Governor Phillip; on one ſide the Carmarthen, on the other, the Lanſdown hills; and that on which we ſtood was called Richmond-hill. In the morning of the 6th, we examined the river, which, as I have before obſerved, was narrow and ſhoally; its bed was compoſed of looſe round ſtones and ſand: it was now low water, and not a ſufficient depth to float the boats: we therefore delayed any farther attempt to get up until it ſhould be near high water; and, in the mean time, determined to take a view of the country round this hill; which, had it been clear of trees, would from its commanding height, have given a moſt extenſive proſpect to the eaſtward, northward, and ſouthward; but the range of hills beforementioned were ſtill higher, and of courſe limited

limited our view to the weſtward. While the other gentlemen of the party were along with the governor, examining the country, I employed myſelf in taking the meridian altitude of the ſun, by which I found the higheſt part of the hill to be in latitude 33° 37′ ſouth. The gentlemen ſpoke highly in favour of the country as far as they walked; it was perfectly clear of any kind of underwood; the trees upon it were all very tall, and ſtood very wide apart; the ſoil was alſo examined, and found very good: a ſmall patch was dug up, and a few potatoes, Indian-corn, melon, and other ſeeds ſown. This was a common practice, when a piece of ground, favourable from its ſoil, and being in an unfrequented ſituation, was found, to ſow a few ſeeds of different kinds: ſome of the little gardens, which had been planted in this manner, and left to nature, have been ſince viſited and found thriving, others have miſcarried. After making theſe obſervations, the tide being made, we put off in the boats, and endeavoured to get higher up, but were frequently aground: by the time we had reached half a mile higher than the foot of Richmond-hill, we met the ſtream ſetting down

down ſo ſtrong, that it was with much difficulty we could get the boats ſo high. We here found the river to divide into two narrow branches, from one of which the ſtream came down with conſiderable velocity, and with a fall over a range of ſtones which ſeemed to lie acroſs its entrance: this was the fall which we had heard the night before from our ſituation on the ſide of Richmond-hill. We found too little water for the boats which we had with us to advance any farther, and the ſtream was very ſtrong, although weak to what it may reaſonably be conjectured to be after heavy rains; for here we had evident marks of the vaſt torrents which muſt pour down from the mountains, after heavy rains. The low grounds, at ſuch times, are entirely covered, and the trees with which they are overgrown, are laid down (with their tops pointing down the river,) as much as I ever ſaw a field of corn after a ſtorm; and where any of theſe trees have been ſtrong enough to reſiſt in *any degree* the ſtrength of the torrent, (for they are all leſs or more bent downwards) we ſaw in the clifts of the branches of ſuch trees, vaſt quantities of large logs which had been hurried down by the

the force of the waters, and lodged from thirty to forty feet above the common level of the river; and at that height there were great quantities of graſs, reeds, and ſuch other weeds as are waſhed from the banks of the river, hanging to the branches. The firſt notice we took of theſe ſigns of an extraordinary ſwelling of the water, was twelve or fourteen miles lower down, and where the river is not ſo confined in its breadth: there we meaſured the ſame ſigns of ſuch torrents twenty-eight feet above the ſurface of the water: the common riſe and fall of the tide did not appear to be more than ſix feet. On the banks here alſo we found yams and other roots, and had evident marks of the natives frequenting theſe parts in ſearch of them for food. They have no doubt ſome method of preparing theſe roots, before they can eat them; for we found one kind which ſome of the company had ſeen the natives dig up; and with which being pleaſed, as it had much the appearance of horſe-radiſh, and had a ſweetiſh taſte, and having ſwallowed a ſmall quantity, it occaſioned violent ſpaſms, cramps in the bowels, and ſickneſs at the ſtomach: it might probably be the caſada root. We found

found here a number of traps, for catching animals, in which we obſerved the feathers of many birds, particularly the quail. We now gave up the hope of tracing this river higher up with our boats; and, as in caſe of heavy rains ſetting in, which might be expected at this ſeaſon of the year, there would be conſiderable danger, while confined in this narrow part of the river, we puſhed down and encamped the night of the 6th, about ſeven miles below Richmond-hill. In the morning early, we ſet off on our return, and encamped on the 7th at night, about twenty-ſix miles down: at ſeven in the morning of the 8th, we embarked again, and by four in the evening had reached a point about forty-three miles down, where we pitched our tents for the night, which was very foggy. In our way down, we ſtopped, and meaſured the perpendicular height of a hill on the north ſide of the river, which I found to be 399 feet: the river was here 120 fathoms wide. On the 9th in the morning, we proceeded to examine ſome of the inferior branches; their general direction was to the ſouthward, and the longeſt was not more than five or ſix miles in length, and was navigable

vigable for ſuch boats as ours; the general depth was three and four fathoms for about four miles up, and then ſhoal water; the others were inconſiderable. In one of theſe branches we paſſed the night of the 9th, and ſaw a few natives, who came off to us in their boats with much chearfulneſs and good humour; I thought I had ſeen them before; they received a few preſents, among which was a looking-glaſs, which we took much trouble to ſhew them the uſe of: they were ſome time before they obſerved their own figure in the glaſs, but when they did, they turned it up and looked behind it; then pointed to the water, ſignifying that they could ſee their figure reflected as well from that. Having now examined every thing which was thought worth our attention, we made the beſt of our way to Mullet-iſland, where we landed on the 10th in the evening, and caught ſome fiſh. This night, and all the next day, (11th,) it blew a gale of wind from the ſouthward, ſo that we were obliged to paſs a ſecond night here. In the morning of the 12th, it was more moderate, although very ſqually and unſettled; we ſtruck our tents and ſailed for Pitt-water, where about

noon we encamped upon a point pretty high up: in our way, we put aſhore to fill ſome freſh water, and in a cave near the ſtream we found a native woman, who appeared to have been dead ſome time, for her ſkin was as hard as a piece of leather; it was impoſſible to know whether ſhe had died of the ſmall-pox or not. In the morning of the 13th, (as we intended to land well up this branch, in order to avoid the moſt difficult and tireſome part of the road to Port Jackſon,) we embarked, after we had breakfaſted, and rowed up about a couple of miles, when the party for walking went on ſhore, each with his arms, and knapſack, containing two days proviſions; we were about half an hour in getting through the wood, which led us to the ſea-coaſt, where we fell into our old and well-known path, and by four o'clock in the afternoon arrived at the north part of Port Jackſon; but we might as well as have been fifty leagues off, for here we could have no communication either with the Sirius or the ſettlement, and no boat had been ordered to meet us. We went immediately to work and made a large fire, by which we lay all night, which happened to be very cold. The

next day we croſſed the hills, and came to the mouth of the north-weſt harbour, but could not find the means of croſſing it; muſkets had been frequently fired during the night, in hopes that ſome boat might have been down the harbour fiſhing, and heard them. We found this morning a canoe upon the beach, with which we had no doubt of getting two men acroſs the water, who could in a ſhort time walk over to the cove where the Sirius lay; but this proſpect was diſappointed by the firſt man who entered the canoe having overſet her, and ſhe immediately ſunk, and he was obliged to ſwim aſhore: after this we went to work and made a catamaran, of the lighteſt wood we could find, but when finiſhed and launched, it would not, although pretty large, bear the weight of one man. It was now propoſed to walk round the head of the north-weſt harbour, which would have been a good long journey, for at leaſt two days, and our proviſions were nearly expended; to this propoſal I was under the neceſſity of objecting, for want of ſhoes, the laſt march having tore all but the ſoals from my feet, and they were tied on with ſpun-yarn; I therefore declined the propoſed walk,

walk, and determined to go back to Broken-bay and rejoin the boats; which I had no doubt of being able to effect in the courſe of that day, and with far more eaſe than I could, without ſhoes, climb ſuch rocky mountains, and thick woods, as lay in the way round the head of the north-weſt harbour. But as it was likely I might fall in with ſome parties of the natives in the way, I wiſhed to have a companion: Captain Collins preferred accompanying me in the intended walk, and we were juſt upon the point of ſetting out, when two of the people who were with us propoſed ſwimming over the water, and to croſs through the wood to the Sirius; the diſtance they had to ſwim was not more than two cables length, or four hundred yards; they immediately ſtripped, and each having had a dram, they tied up in a handkerchief a ſhirt, trowſers, and a pair of ſhoes each, which was reſted upon their ſhoulders: thus equipped, they took the water, and in ſeven minutes landed on the oppoſite ſhore; but one being ſeized with the cramp, was obliged to diſengage himſelf from his bundle, which was of courſe loſt: they ſet off through the woods, and in a ſhort time got on board the

ſhip, the one with his ſhirt and trowſers, the other perfectly naked. Upon their information, a boat was ſent down, and took us on board, after a pretty fatiguing journey. I cannot help here remarking how providential it was, that we did not all agree to walk round the north-weſt harbour. At eight in the morning we heard the report of a great gun, which led me to ſuſpect that ſome perſon belonging to the Sirius was miſſing, and had probably been loſt in the woods; we frequently fired muſkets that morning, and ſometimes imagined we heard a muſket at a conſiderable diſtance in the woods; in conſequence of this ſuſpicion, we frequently fired ſeveral together, and as often heard the report of that which we believed was meant to anſwer us; in ſhort, by means of theſe repeated vollies, we drew nearer to that which anſwered us, and by hallooing all together, found we had got within hearing of the perſon who had anſwered our firing; for, after calling out, we liſtened attentively, and heard a very faint voice in anſwer; in that direction we walked, and at laſt, by frequent calling, and anſwering, we found the perſon out, who proved to be Peter White, ſail-maker

of

of the Sirius; who had been four days loſt, and when he ſet out from the ſhip had not more than four ounces of biſcuit with him, one ounce of which he had ſtill left; he was very faint, and appeared to us to be ſtupid and almoſt exhauſted, for he ſtaggered like a man drunk; we took him with us, and by giving him ſuch proviſions as we had, in ſmall proportions, he was in a few hours a good deal recovered; but I think if he had not been found as he was, in twenty-four hours more he would not have been able to make any farther effort to ſave himſelf, and muſt have periſhed where he lay down. It is remarkable, that the flint of his gun being worn to a ſtump, he could not get fire out of it the whole of the day before, when trying to ſhoot ſome birds for his ſubſiſtence, until night came on, when it was neceſſary for him to have a fire to ſleep by; he then tried it again with very little hope of ſucceeding, but contrary to his expectations he got a fire and ſat by it the whole night; the next morning it failed him repeatedly, until he had occaſion to anſwer our muſquets, when it ſtruck fire every time he wiſhed to anſwer us, otherwiſe, in all probability, we

ſhould not have found him. This is exactly his own account.

In the months of September and October, I ſurveyed Broken Bay and Botany Bay: the Sirius alſo, having been ſurveyed, and found defective in many places, during this period, received ſuch repairs as could be given her in this country; theſe being finiſhed by the end of October, we took our proviſions and ſtores on board; and on the 7th of November, we moved the ſhip from Careening Cove over to Sydney Cove. A few days before that time, John Mara, the gunner's mate, had been miſſing, and was ſuppoſed to have been loſt in the woods; parties were ſent out in ſearch of him: the third day after he diſappeared, I was going up the harbour in a boat early in the morning; and ſome diſtance up, I thought I heard the voice of a man upon the north ſhore; we lay upon the oars a conſiderable time, and liſtened attentively; we again heard the voice, and rowed immediately towards that part of the ſhore from whence the voice came, and there we found the perſon miſſing: he was ſitting upon a rock, was exceedingly faint, and ſcarcely able to get into the boat; having had nothing to eat during his abſence

but an herb which the people uſe by way of tea, and which is ſo palatable they can drink it without ſugar; it has exactly the taſte of liquoriſh root. I interrogated him with reſpect to the manner of his loſing himſelf; he ſaid, "That having been ſent on ſhore in the "evening to fill a few water-caſks, which "were landed at a run of water near the ſhip, "and that having juſt before he was ſent on "ſhore taken a copious drink of grog, he "felt himſelf, ſoon after he landed, a good "deal diſpoſed to ſleep; that the weather "being warm, and the evening well advanc-"ed, he laid down upon the hill, ſome diſ-"tance from the run of water, and fell faſt "aſleep upon the graſs; that he did not "wake until it was late, and the night being "dark, and he a little confuſed when he "awoke, he went farther into the wood in-"ſtead of coming out of it, and by that "means loſt himſelf entirely." He alſo ſaid, "That when I took him up, he was ſo ex-"hauſted that he ſhould not have been able "to walk much longer, and that he had "only reached the water-ſide the night be-"fore." He had no arms of any kind; it was therefore fortunate that he did not fall in

with any of the natives, as we have much reaſon to believe that they are diſpoſed to take the advantage of thoſe they meet without fire-arms.

The night before we left Careening Cove, Mr. Francis Hill, one of the maſter's mates, had deſired permiſſion to go over to Sydney Cove, and to return early the next morning; he went over, and was the next morning early put acroſs to the neareſt part of the north ſhore, intending to walk round to the ſhip, a route which had been often taken by many of our gentlemen, and was not more than an hour and a half's walk, but in this ſhort diſtance Mr. Hill loſt himſelf. The next day, parties were ſent out different ways, and boats were ſent both up and down the harbour in ſearch of him; a gun for their and his direction was fired from the ſhip every two hours, and this continued for two days. The third day, many additional parties were ſent, to the number of nine or ten; in ſhort, every piece of ground where it was thought poſſible he might have paſſed, was traverſed over and over by the different parties, but without effect; we had, therefore, much reaſon to believe that he fell in with a party

of

of the natives, who probably murdered him, for he had no arms of any kind with him. That this opinion of a diſpoſition in the natives to take advantage of a ſingle perſon, particularly when unarmed, is not ill founded, we have had many inſtances to prove; one of which in this place may ſuffice, as it had happened very recently, and near to the place where Mr. Hill was loſt. A man belonging to the Sirius, who had generally been employed in ſhooting for the officers, was, a few days previous to the ſuppoſed death of Mr. Hill, in the woods looking for game, and had been ſeen by a party of the natives from the ſkirts of a wood; they had not been obſerved by him, and taking the advantage of that, threw a large ſtone at him, which very narrowly miſſed his head, at which it was very well aimed; had it hit him, it would have knocked him down and deprived him of his ſenſes, which opportunity they would no doubt have availed themſelves of to diſpatch him; but as they did not ſucceed in their attempt, they ſtood their ground, and he fired a charge of ſmall ſhot at them, which I ſuppoſe they felt no inconvenience from, as they laughed at him, and advanced

advanced with their lances; he was pretty quick in loading his gun again, into which he put a heavy charge of buck-ſhot, and as they appeared to him to be determined on miſchief, he reſolved, for his own ſafety, to be before-hand with them; he took very good aim, and fired right amongſt them; two of them fell, and the reſt, with great precipitation, made off, but he believed they carried their wounded (probably dead) friends with them; he ſtood where he was and loaded his gun, then came towards the ſhip without ſeeing any more of them. They are exceedingly terrified by fire-arms.

There was one circumſtance which diſpoſed me to believe that Mr. Hill had been murdered by the people of the country, which was, that one of the boats which went down the harbour to look for him put a-ſhore in one of the coves in the north part of it; the young gentleman who had charge of this duty went up the beach, with five of the boat's crew, while two remained to take care of the boat; they had only been landed a few minutes, and were near the ſkirt of the wood, when two ſpears were launched from a riſing ground, one of which ſtruck the hat of one of the

the ſeamen; and as no fire-arms had appeared, the natives ſhewed themſelves, to the number of between twenty and thirty; the midſhipman and the ſailors returned to the boat, and brought up a muſquet loaded with ball, which the natives obſerving, all diſappeared, except two, and the ball was fired at them; whether with or without effect we knew not, but they alſo diſappeared immediately. Theſe hoſtile appearances, I think, may have been the effect of their ſucceſs, in having lately murdered ſome of our people; for as we have had ſeveral ſuch accidents here, we have had an opportunity of remarking, that they have generally ſhewn immediately after them, a more than ordinary degree of hoſtility.

The want of one of the people of this country, who, from a habit of living amongſt us, might have been the means of preventing much of this hoſtile diſpoſition in them towards us, was much to be lamented. If poor Ara-ba-noo had lived, he would have acquired enough of our language to have underſtood whatever we wiſhed him to communicate to his countrymen; he could have made them perfectly underſtand, that we wiſhed to live with them on the moſt friendly footing, and that

that we wiſhed to promote, as much as might be in our power, their comfort and happineſs.

The two children mentioned formerly, and who were very happy amongſt us, were yet too young to be of uſe in reconciling the natives to us; they now underſtood almoſt every thing we ſaid, and could make themſelves very well underſtood; but the governor was deſirous of having a man or two in our poſſeſſion, to whom we might teach enough of our language without the danger of loſing any part of their own, to render them uſeful to their countrymen; it had therefore for ſome time paſt been in agitation to endeavour, by force, to ſecure one or two.

For that purpoſe, on the 25th of November, Lieutenant Bradley, with ſome other officers, and a party of men, were ſent down the harbour in an armed boat: they went to the north part of the harbour, where, upon one of the ſandy beaches, they obſerved two native men walking: they immediately formed a ſcheme to entice them to a converſation; for that purpoſe, a few large fiſh were held up, and they were called to, which had the

deſired

deſired effect; the men with great confidence came forward unarmed, and with much cheerfulneſs received the fiſh, and held a converſation with thoſe who preſented them. At this time there were about five of our people upon the beach, and the boat lying afloat, with her ſtern cloſe to the ſhore, and the ſailors lying on their oars: Mr. Bradley, who was in the ſtern of the boat, ſeeing the opportunity good, gave the ſignal for ſecuring them; in a moment their heels were knocked up, and they were tumbled into the boat, followed by thoſe who ſecured them, and the boat pulled immediately off. They called out to their friends the moment they were taken hold of, but though a conſiderable number appeared in the ſkirt of the wood, on ſeeing arms in the hands of thoſe in the boat, who ſtood up ready to fire, they did not venture an attack. The men were laſhed to the thwarts of the boat, on their firſt being taken into her, but after having got to ſuch a diſtance from the ſhore, as to prevent the poſſibility of an eſcape, their hands were looſed, and they were ſecured by only one leg; but until they were thus far liberated, their terror was conſiderable. On their being landed at Sydney-Cove,

ney-Cove, they were immediately taken up to the governor's houſe, where they were very kindly treated; but to prevent any attempt to eſcape being at all probable, they had each an iron-ſhackle put on one of their legs, to which a piece of rope was ſpliced, and a man was ordered for each, who was to be anſwerable for their ſecurity; wherever they went thoſe keepers accompanied them, holding one end of the rope. When theſe two ſtrangers landed in Sydney-Cove, many people, prompted by curioſity, went to ſee them; among that number were the boy and girl, natives, whoſe names, I think, when ſpeaking of them, I have never yet mentioned; the girl was called *A-ba-roo*, and the boy *Nan-bar-ry*, or *Bal-der-ry*: the moment they ſaw the men, they with raptures of joy called them both by their names; the children were alſo known to them, and it was not improbable but that their very comfortable appearance, after having lived ſo long amongſt us, might, in ſome degree, calm that perturbation of mind, which we would naturally believe might attend them in ſuch a ſtate of captivity; for it ſhould be recollected, that not one of thoſe natives whom

whom we have had amongſt us, had ever returned to inform their friends, what kind of treatment they had met with from us; it was therefore not to be wondered at, if they ſuppoſed that ſuch as fell into our hands were put to death. The two old men who were picked up when very ill with the ſmall-pox, at the time *A-ba-roo* and *Nan-bar-ry* were found, (and whom we believed to be the fathers of the children) died very ſoon. Poor *Ara-ba-noo*, who was at liberty to go where he pleaſed ſome time before he died, was ſo well reconciled to us, that he never ſhewed the ſmalleſt inclination to go from us; he unfortunately did not ſurvive the ſmall-pox, and the girl and boy were now ſo accuſtomed to our manner of living, that it was not at all probable they would reliſh that of their own country. We ſoon diſcovered, upon the arrival of theſe two ſtrangers, whom the children called by name, that one was a chief, or diſtinguiſhed perſon, among thoſe of the tribe of *Ca-di-gal*; his name was *Co-al-by*; he was a man of about 35 years of age; the other was about 25 years old, and was called by ſeveral different names, ſuch as *Ban-ne-long*, *Vogle-troo-ye*,

or

or *Vo-la-ra-very*; the firſt we thought his proper name, the others we underſtood from himſelf were names by which ſome of his particular connections were diſtinguiſhed, and which he had, upon their death, taken up: this man was a very good looking young fellow, of a pleaſant lively diſpoſition. The preſence of *Co-al-by* ſeemed to be a check upon the chearful temper of *Ban-ne-long*, which inclined us to think that he paid a kind of deference to him; he was always very ſilent in his company. Seventeen days after theſe people were taken, they appeared ſo well ſatisfied, that their keepers began to be leſs apprehenſive of their attempting to make their eſcape, which they did not fail to notice, and had no doubt laid a plan to avail themſelves of, for they were very far from being deſtitute of obſervation and cunning. One evening, when it was pretty dark, their keepers were ſitting within the door of their houſe, eating their ſupper; *Ban-ne-long* was within alſo, and employed in the ſame manner; *Co-al-by* was at the door, ſitting juſt on the outſide, and had with him ſomething for his ſupper, which he pretended to be employed about, the end of his

his rope was in the hand of his keeper; while they in the inſide were thus amuſed, *Co-al-by* drew the ſplice of his rope from the ſhackle, and in a moment was over the paling of the yard, and out of ſight; an immediate ſearch was made for him, but without effect, we ſaw him no more: however we heard afterwards that he joined his friends again, and will no doubt be careful how he confides hereafter in us: his friends would certainly be ſomething ſurprized to ſee him ſo well cloathed, for he carried off his whole wardrobe. I ſuppoſe it would coſt him ſome trouble to get the ſhackle from his leg, which was rivetted on. The other man was much more chearful after *Co-al-by*'s abſence, which confirmed our conjecture, and the children's account, that he was a man more diſtinguiſhed in his tribe than *Ban-ne-long*.

In the month of January, 1790, in every company, the converſation turned upon the long expected arrivals from England, which we had been for ſome time paſt in daily expectation of, with a ſupply of proviſions. We all looked forward with hope for arrivals with a relief; and that every aſſiſtance neceſſary for ſtrangers might be at hand, I offered, with a few men

from the Sirius, to go down to the ſouth head of the harbour, there to build a lookout-houſe, and erect a flag-ſtaff upon the height, which might be ſeen from the ſea; and which might alſo communicate information of ſhips in the offing to the governor at Sydney-cove. The governor approved my propoſals. I went down with ſix men, and was accompanied by Mr. White and Mr. Worgan, the ſurgeons of the ſettlement and Sirius. We erected a flag-ſtaff, and lived in a tent for ten days, in which time we compleated a tolerably good houſe. At the end of ten days, I was relieved by Mr. Bradley with a freſh party.

CHAP.

CHAPTER V.

The Sirius and Supply ſail for Norfolk-Iſland.—Land the marines and convicts.—Wreck of the Sirius.—Some proviſions ſaved.—Martial Law eſtabliſhed.—Ratio of proviſions ſettled.—Vaſt numbers of birds caught.—In diſtreſs for proviſions.—Receive a ſupply from Port Jackſon.—Officers and crew of the Sirius leave Norfolk-Iſland, and arrive at Port Jackſon.

IN February, we began to look a little ſerious on our diſappointment of arrivals. The governor now ſaw a neceſſity for dividing the ſettlement, and ſignified his intention that ſuch diviſion ſhould take place ſoon, by ſending a certain number of marines and convicts, under the command of Major Roſs, the lieutenant-governor, to Norfolk Iſland; at which place he underſtood there were many reſources, which Port Jackſon, or the country round it, did not afford; and the gardens and cultivated lands here alſo would then be more

enjoyed by the remaining numbers: accordingly an arrangement took place, and on the 26th of February, I received an order to prepare the Sirius for ſea, and to embark the lieutenant governor, with one company of marines, and the officers, baggage, and alſo 186 convicts; in all, 221 perſons; with ſuch a proportion of the remaining proviſions and other ſtores, as the ſettlement at that time could furniſh; and I was directed to land them upon Norfolk Iſland: Lieutenant Ball, commander of his Majeſty's armed tender Supply, was ordered under my command, and he alſo embarked a company of marines, and twenty convicts.

We ſailed from Port Jackſon on the 6th of March, and made Lord Howe's Iſland on the 9th, at four in the afternoon.

On the 13th, at two o'clock in the morning, we made Norfolk Iſland, which I did not expect we ſhould have done quite ſo ſoon, but the eaſterly current, which is commonly found here, had been ſtrong: we brought to till day-light, and then, as the wind was freſh from the ſouth-weſt, I well knew there could be no landing in Sydney-bay, where

where the ſettlement is fixed, on account of the high ſurf, which ſoutherly winds occaſion, I therefore bore away, and ran round to the north-eaſt ſide of the iſland into a bay called Caſcade-bay; where, after a few days of moderate weather, and an off-ſhore wind, it is poſſible to land; but that only on one ſpot, which is a rock that projects ſome diſtance into the ſea, and has deep water to it: on that rock I landed, on the afternoon of the 13th, all the marines, and a conſiderable number of the convicts, but being ſet to the eaſtward in the night, I did not land the remainder until the 15th, when they were alſo put on ſhore on the ſame place: theſe people were no ſooner on ſhore than the wind ſhifted to the eaſtward, and blew ſtrong, and the weather became hazy, ſo that I had no proſpect of being able to land any part of the proviſions. We had put on ſhore from the Sirius and Supply 270 people, and had no opportunity of ſending any ſtores with them, as we were now driven out of ſight of the iſland. I knew the exhauſted ſtate of the ſtores there; I was alſo acquainted with the many difficulties which Lieutenant

Ball, commander of the Supply, had met with in the different voyages he had made from Port Jackſon to this iſland, with proviſions; and the length of time he had, in ſome of theſe voyages, been obliged to cruize, before he could have any acceſs to the ſhore; ſo continually does the ſurf break all round it: theſe conſiderations gave me much anxiety and uneaſineſs. On the 19th, a ſlant wind from the ſouth-eaſt brought me again in with the iſland: the Supply had, the preceding night, parted company, but as they were better acquainted here than we were, I judged they had ſtood for the land in the night before I did. As we ſtood in, finding we could fetch the windward part of the iſland, I ſteered in for Sydney-bay; and as we drew near, I obſerved the Supply lying to in the bay, and the ſignal upon the ſhore was flying, that long-boats, or any other boats might land, without any danger from the ſurf. Anxious to avail myſelf of this favourable ſignal, I ſteered in as far as I judged ſafe, and brought to with the ſhip's head off ſhore, in the windward part of the bay, hoiſted out the boats, loaded them with proviſions, and ſent them in; but obſerving

obſerving that the ſhip ſettled faſt to leeward, we made ſail, the Supply had alſo made ſail, and was to leeward of the Sirius. There is a reef of ſunken rocks, which lies off the weſt point of the bay, and which (as the wind freſhened and the ſea roſe) broke a conſiderable way out; the Supply having drawn ahead, could not weather this reef: on this ſhe tacked; and, as we drew near, I plainly perceived that we ſettled ſo faſt to leeward that we ſhould not be able to weather it: ſo, after ſtanding as near as was ſafe, we put the ſhip in ſtays; ſhe came up almoſt head to wind, but the wind juſt at that critical moment baffled her, and ſhe fell off again: nothing could now be done, but to wear her round in as little room as poſſible, which was done, and the wind hauled upon the other tack, with every ſail ſet as before; but, ſtill perceiving that the ſhip ſettled into the bay, and that ſhe ſhoaled the water, ſome hands were placed by one of the bower anchors, in five fathoms water; the helm was again put down, and ſhe had now ſome additional afterſail, which I had no doubt would enſure her coming about; ſhe came up almoſt head to

wind and there hung ſome time; but by her ſails being all aback, had freſh ſtern way: the anchor was therefore cut away, and all the haulyards, ſheets, and tacks let go, but before the cable could be brought to check her, ſhe ſtruck upon a reef of coral rocks which lies parallel to the ſhore, and in a few ſtrokes was bulged; when the carpenter reported to me, that the water flowed faſt into the hold; I ordered the maſts to be cut away, which was immediately done. There was ſome chance, when the ſhip was lightened of this weight, that by the ſurges of the ſea, which were very heavy, ſhe might be thrown ſo far in up the reef, as to afford ſome proſpect of ſaving the lives of thoſe on board, if ſhe ſhould prove ſtrong enough to bear the ſhocks ſhe received from every ſea. It was now about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, and after the maſts were gone, all hands were employed in getting out of the hold ſuch proviſions as could be come at, and ſecuring them upon the gun-deck, that they might be at hand in caſe any opportunity offered of floating them on ſhore. In the evening the wind freſhened ſtill more, and the ſurf was conſiderably increaſed; in conſequence of which,

which, it was ſtrongly recommended by the gentlemen on ſhore, who knew the place much better than we could, that every perſon ſhould quit the ſhip: for this purpoſe the end of a ſmall rope was floated through the ſurf, and over the reef, to the ſhore, by an empty caſk; and by that rope a ſeven inch hawſer was hauled on ſhore, with a wooden heart upon it for a traveller, and the end was made faſt to a tree: by this traveller I correſponded with thoſe on ſhore, and received their opinions. To the traveller three or four ſailors at a time were made faſt, and were hauled by the people on ſhore through the ſurf, and over a ragged reef to the land; another part this evening, and the remainder the next day. The whole crew were intended to have been landed that night, but when it became dark the hauling rope of the traveller got often foul of the rocks, which might have occaſioned the drowning of thoſe who were at ſuch a time on the traveller: for the long ſcope of hawſer (nearly the length of two hawſers) by the weight of three or four people, was more than two-thirds of the way in the ſurf, and the men on it under water. The ſecond day after the landing of the crew, the weather

weather being more moderate, and the ſurf leſs dangerous, a few of the ſeamen, who could depend in caſe of accident, upon their good ſwimming, were got on board by the hawſer, and the utmoſt exertion uſed to get ſome part of the proviſions ſent on ſhore; but it was the fifth day before any could be landed. We were now upon this little iſland 506 ſouls, upon half allowance of proviſions; and that could, with our preſent numbers, laſt but a very ſhort time; as the ſupply intended for the iſland was yet on board the Sirius; and conſequently its ſafety very uncertain. Providence was kind to us. We had for ſeveral days the weather fine, and the ſurf uncommonly ſmooth, for this place: each of thoſe fine days we got on ſhore from twenty to thirty caſks of proviſions, with various other articles of both public and private property; ſuch articles as would ſwim were entruſted to the chance of being thrown on ſhore by the ſurf: all that I or any other officer ſaved, was found waſhing upon the beach; but as the ſhore was lined with the marines, to prevent the convicts from committing depredations, it was much, but not wholly prevented. Every thing which came on ſhore

was

was placed under the care of centinels, until claimed by the proprietor, before certain officers. But that ſucceſs which attended thoſe things that were committed to the ſea, proved at laſt a misfortune; for it occaſioned their truſting every thing promiſcuouſly of private property to the ſurf; by which many valuable articles of mine and ſome of the officers were loſt, being too heavy to float, a circumſtance that thoſe who threw them overboard had not conſidered. The proviſions being the firſt object, nothing beſides was allowed to be ſent by the traveller; and notwithſtanding it was all dragged through the ſea, the damaged part was but trifling. Some caſks were waſhed out of the ſlings, daſhed to pieces upon the rocks, and of courſe loſt; but, taking the whole together, we ſaved more proviſions than we could have reaſonably expected.

By the time we had landed the principal part of the proviſions, the weather began to be rather unfavourable to our wiſhes and endeavours; the wind ſet in from the ſouthward, the ſea roſe and occaſioned a very high ſurf, which rendered it unſafe for any perſon to remain on board; the ſmall bower cable, which

which had hitherto kept the ſhip's head to the ſea, being cut by the rocks, and the ſhip being conſiderably lightened by what had been taken out of her, ſhe was lifted ſo high by every ſea, as to occaſion her ſtriking very heavily; and by thoſe repeated ſhocks ſhe was thrown for a ſhort time broad-ſide to the ſea: had ſhe kept in that poſition, ſhe would ſoon have gone to pieces; but from her being very light forward, the iron ballaſt having dropt out of her bottom, ſhe was lifted fairly round, and was thrown more than her own length nearer to the ſhore, and was, by this change in her poſition, almoſt out of the reach of the break of the ſea; ſo that when the weather was moderate and the ſurf low, we got with more eaſe on board, and could remain there with leſs danger. One of the bow ports was enlarged for the purpoſe of getting caſks and other parcels out; the hauſer and traveller were alſo fitted and hove taught from the bow, and various ſtores were ſent on ſhore with more eaſe and certainty than before; but the knees of the beams, being many of them broke, and the ends of the beams being diſlodged from the clamps, the orlop deck blown up, and the lower deck beams

beams looſe, and many of them broken, it was dangerous to attempt going into the hold; for by every ſtroke of the ſea, the decks were all in motion: however, every thing that could be got at by the ſailors on board was ſent on ſhore.

A few days after the unfortunate loſs of the Sirius, the ſhip's company being all on ſhore, with very little proviſions on the iſland for ſo great a number of people, and the ſupply from the wreck being yet in a very precarious ſituation, the lieutenant-governor aſſembled all the officers in the ſettlement together; and in order that the deſcription of people now among us in ſo conſiderable a number, (I mean the convicts, who I believe to have been ſome of the worſt characters ſent from Great-Britain) ſhould fear the commiſſion of any crime here, more than they had ever done under the laws hitherto eſtabliſhed in this ſettlement, it was unanimouſly judged neceſſary for the general ſafety and good of the whole, that martial law be now eſtabliſhed in this iſland until ſuch time as we might be relieved from the diſtreſſing proſpect that was now before us, by a ſupply of proviſions, or until the governor in chief of his Majeſty's

territory

territory in this part of the world might think fit, either to approve or diſapprove of it. The neceſſity of ſuch a meaſure in the ſituation we were now reduced to, I apprehend, will be apparent to every conſiderate perſon. By the proclamation of the law martial, which was generally conſented to, not by an oath, as I believe is commonly the caſe, where it is found neceſſary: but, the ſervice we had to perform not admitting of the delay that ſuch ceremony would have occaſioned, the general approbation was taken by every individual paſſing under the king's colours, which were diſplayed for that purpoſe; *that ceremony* every perſon was previouſly informed would be conſidered as an aſſent, and which was done with a degree of ſolemnity, and at the ſame time an apparent chearfulneſs through the whole.

By this proclamation of the law martial, much miſchief I am of opinion was prevented: hitherto, every convict, or any other perſon on this iſland, who had committed any crime which merited a trial by the criminal court, were to be ſent the firſt opportunity to Port Jackſon, with all the neceſſary evidence, and there to be tried. This, in our ſituation, would

would have been attended with innumerable inconveniences, and many bad conſequences, which, as I have already ſaid, I confidently believe were prevented by this proclamation; which may be ſaid to have been held out *in terrorem* only: for, during the whole time of its exiſtence, we had but once occaſion to put it in force; the fear of an immediate trial, and, if found guilty, immediate execution, kept every body tolerably honeſt and attentive to the neceſſary duties, which it became the whole of us now to look forward to.

As the Supply tender ſailed from this iſland on the 24th of March, which was the fifth day after the loſs of the Sirius, and we had not at that time been able to get any part of the proviſions from the wreck; ſhe could not carry to the governor any certain account, whether we ſhould or ſhould not be able to get any thing on ſhore, to help out the very ſcanty proportion of proviſions which now remained in the ſtore: we therefore entertained a glimmering of hope that ſhe might, in the courſe of five or ſix weeks, return to us with the very comfortable news of arrivals from England. However, after the expiration of that

that time, during which we looked anxiouſly to the ſea, our ſituation began to wear a very alarming aſpect. We now had no doubt, but that in conſequence of a diſappointment in the expected arrivals, the governor had found it neceſſary to diſpatch Lieutenant Ball to ſome European ſettlement, and that he could not relieve us with proviſions from Port Jackſon. In conſequence of this deplorable ſituation, on the 14th of May, the officers compoſing the council met the lieutenant-governor agreeable to appointment, and publiſhed the following orders:—"At a meeting of the governor "and council held to conſider of the very "exhauſted ſtate of the proviſions in this ſet-"tlement, and to conſult upon what means "are moſt proper to be purſued, in order to "preſerve life until ſuch time as we may "be relieved by ſome arrivals from England, "of which we have been ſo long in ex-"pectation, but probably diſappointed by "ſome unfortunate accident having hap-"pened to the ſhips intended for this coun-"try: The ſtate of the proviſions having "been laid before the council, and the a-"larming ſituation of the ſettlement having "been taken into the moſt ſerious conſidera-

"tion,

" tion, the following ratio of proviſions was
" unanimouſly reſolved and ordered to take
" place on Saturday the 15th inſtant, viz.
" Flour—three pounds per week, for every
" grown perſon.
" Beef—one pound and an half per ditto;
" or in lieu of the beef, 17 ounces of
" pork.
" Rice—one pound per ditto.
" Children above twelve months old, half
" the above ratio. Children under twelve
" months old, one pound and an half of
" flour and a pound of rice per week. In
" future, all crimes which may by any three
" members of the council be conſidered as
" not of a capital nature, will be puniſhed
" at their diſcretion, by a farther reduction
" of the preſent allowance of proviſions."

Every day, and during every breeze from the weſtward, we now looked out upon the ſea; but on this unfrequented ocean we could expect nothing to appear but what might be intended for us. Day after day we talked to each other reſpecting our ſituation, as no other ſubject ſeemed to occupy the mind of any one among us. At this particular ſeaſon we had one advantage, which, when that leaves us,

will reduce us to very great diſtreſs; I think then, that many of the convicts (who are indolent to aſtoniſhment, and who can, and frequently do, eat at one meal what they are allowed for a week) muſt, when the reſource I am going to mention fails, periſh for want, or ſuffer death for the depredations they are ſo much inclined, even in times of plenty, to commit upon others.

In the month of April we found that Mount Pitt, which is the higheſt ground on the iſland, was, during the night, crowded with birds. This hill is as full of holes as any rabbit warren; in theſe holes at this ſeaſon theſe birds burrow and make their neſts, and as they are an aquatic bird, they are, during the day-time, frequently at ſea in ſearch of food; as ſoon as it is dark, they hover in vaſt flocks over the ground where their neſts are. Our people, (I mean ſeamen, marines, and convicts) who are ſent out in parties to provide birds for the general benefit, arrive upon the ground ſoon after duſk, where they light ſmall fires, which attract the attention of the birds, and they drop down out of the air as faſt as the people can take them up and kill them;

them: when they are upon the ground, the length of their wings prevents their being able to riſe, and until they can aſcend an eminence, they are unable to recover the uſe of their limbs; for this purpoſe, nature has provided them with a ſtrong, ſharp, and hooked bill, and in their heel a ſharp ſpur, with the aſſiſtance of which, and the ſtrength of their bill, they have been ſeen to climb the ſtalk of a tree ſufficiently high to throw themſelves upon the wing. This bird, when deprived of its feathers, is about the ſize of a pigeon, but when cloathed, is conſiderably larger, for their feathers are exceedingly thick; they are webb-footed, and of a ruſty black colour; they make their holes upon the hills for breeding their young in; they lay but one egg, and that is full as large as a duck's egg. They were, at the end of May, as plentiful as if none had been caught, although for two months before there had not been leſs taken than from two to three thouſand birds every night; moſt of the females taken in May were with egg, which really fills the whole cavity of the body, and is ſo heavy that I think it muſt fatigue the bird much in flying. This *bird of Providence*, which I may with

great propriety call it, appeared to me to reſemble that ſea bird in England, called the puffin: they had a ſtrong fiſhy taſte, but our keen appetites reliſhed them very well; the eggs were excellent.

We were highly indebted to Providence for this vaſt reſource; but as theſe ſingular advantages could only be for a ſeaſon, we reflected, with pain, that they muſt have an end, and that in all probability this would be the caſe before we got a relief.

In the end of May the wreck of the ſhip ſtill held together, but the beams and knees were all either broken or looſe; ſhe was ſo much out of the reach of the ſurf when it was very heavy, that it broke with conſiderable leſs force upon her than formerly. Every time that the weather would admit, a few ſailors were ſent on board to ſave whatever articles could be got at, and to ſend them on ſhore.

Our diſtreſs did not occaſion us to forget that the 4th of June was the birth-day of our much beloved ſovereign. On the morning of this day the colours were diſplayed, and at noon three vollies of muſquetry were fired by the marines; as an acknowledgment that we were

were Britons, who, however diſtant and diſtreſſed, revered our king, and loved our country.

On the 6th of July, a convict man who had been out in ſearch of birds, reported, that he had been robbed of his ſhirt by three other convicts, who being too lazy to work, had left the buſineſs they had been employed at, and had taken ſhelter in the woods: and as it became neceſſary to check an evil of ſo dangerous a nature as early as poſſible, leſt from any inattention to it many of the very worthleſs characters, which were now upon the iſland, might be encouraged to aſſemble in conſiderable numbers, to the very great annoyance of the more induſtrious part of the ſettlement, the lieutenant-governor directed two ſmall parties of marines, and expreſſed a wiſh that I would alſo order two parties of the ſeamen, who might probably be leſs ſuſpected of any deſign, to apprehend them. Each man ſent upon this duty was provided with a ſhip's piſtol, and a few charges of powder and ball: in the evening of the ſame day on which the parties went out, the culprits were brought in, pinioned by two of the ſeamen who had been ſent

after them. A few days after, a court-martial was aſſembled for the trial of the above convicts, and they were ſentenced to receive 300 laſhes each.

The Sirius's men were now wholly employed, when the weather would admit, in fiſhing for the ſettlers; and when the ſurf was too high, in making fiſhing-lines and hooks. A party of marines, and all the convicts, were employed in clearing ground for corn and potatoes. On the 24th of July, there being at that time no more than ten or twelve days ſalt proviſions left, at the ſhort allowance before-mentioned, and as birds, though growing ſcarce, were yet ſtill to be had, it was judged neceſſary by the lieutenant-governor and council to ſtop the ſalt proviſions entirely during the time which birds were to be caught; ſo that the ratio now was three pounds of flour, and one pint of rice per week, or in lieu of the flour, the ſame quantity of Indian corn meal, or wheat ground, with the huſks and bran in the meal.

The people in general were now reduced ſo low in bodily ſtrength for want of a ſufficiency of food, that much work could not be expected; however, it was abſolutely neceſſary

ceſſary that ſomething ſhould be done to get ſeed into the ground. A conſiderable portion of the cleared land was planted with potatoes, as the firſt thing from which we could expect any relief.

On the 4th of Auguſt, one of the ſeamen who had been walking towards the ſouth-eaſt part of the iſland, caſting his eyes towards the ſea, *ſaw a ſail*; without waiting a moment to examine her particularly, he ran back with as much ſpeed as poſſible, calling out as he ran, A ſhip! a ſhip! This news was all over the ſettlement in a few minutes, and men, women, and children were haſtening in different directions to welcome the expected relief. I took a ſpy glaſs in my hand, and went to the place from whence the ſhip had been ſeen, and there to my very great happineſs, I obſerved a ſhip with an Engliſh enſign flying, not more than ſix or ſeven miles off ſhore; the windat this time blowing ſtrong from ſouth-weſt, it was not poſſible for her to appear off Sydney-Bay, ſhe therefore wore, and ſeemed to intend going under the lee of the iſland, in order to land a boat there. Captain Johnſtone of the marines, and myſelf, agreed to walk acroſs the iſland and re-

ceive them. We ſet off, and when we arrived at the ſea-ſide, it is impoſſible for me to deſcribe our feelings, when we obſerved the ſhip before the wind, and making ſail from the iſland. We did all we could to ſhew ourſelves, but they did not think proper to ſpeak to us. The effect this diſappointment had upon every individual on the iſland will be eaſier to conceive than to expreſs by words. Every one agreed in opinion, that it would have been much better if no ſhip had been ſeen.

As Captain Johnſtone and I were on our way home, lamenting our diſappointment, it ſtruck me that this ſhip muſt be from Port Jackſon, and that the commander was bound to China; had nothing on board for the iſland, and therefore did not chooſe to loſe any time; but if this conjecture ſhould be juſt, he muſt have known from our friends what the probable ſtate of this iſland was, and therefore might readily ſuppoſe that five minutes converſation would have been a vaſt relief to our anxiety. After having determined to believe that he was from Port Jackſon, and that we ſhould ſoon have ſomething from thence, we kept a very good look-out, and, to our great happineſs,

happineſs, on the 7th, a ſhip was diſcovered in the offing, and towards the evening, another appeared in ſight; the ſurf being low, a boat was ſent immediately off to go on board the neareſt: they proved to be the Juſtinian and the Surprize, from Port Jackſon, with proviſions for the relief of this iſland, and with an addition to the number of convicts, of about 200.

We received information, by theſe ſhips, of the unfortunate accident which befel his Majeſty's ſhip Guardian, in her paſſage to this country, with proviſions and ſtores; and alſo that the Gorgon was fitting, to bring farther ſupplies, with another lieutenant-governor, who commanded a corps that had been raiſed for this particular ſervice, the marines being ordered for England.

The Juſtinian and Surprize, by the good fortune of an uncommon time of fine weather, were cleared in little more than three weeks, and proceeded upon their voyage to China on the 30th. If theſe ſhips had been here two months before they did arrive, the weather was ſuch that they could not have been cleared two days before the time that they were. We were now looking eagerly for the arrival

arrival of the Gorgon, which ſhip, the governor informed me by letter, was to take the Sirius's crew and marines off this ſpot, which has coſt me ſo much diſtreſs.

As ſoon as the above ſhips arrived, and we had communication with them; for their ſafety, as well as for the more expeditiouſly landing the proviſions, I ſent Lieutenant Bradley on board the one, he being now perfectly acquainted with the ſet of the tides, their uncertainty, and all the other dangers around the iſland; I alſo ſent Mr. Donovan, a midſhipman, on board the other, he having been near two years upon duty on this iſland, and was well acquainted with the above particulars: this aſſiſtance enabled them at all proper times to make more free with the ſhore. Mr. Keltie the maſter of the Sirius, and Mr. Brooks the boatſwain, attended with me the whole day at the landing-place; the boats employed on this buſineſs were manned by the Sirius's crew; ſo that every poſſible attention to prevent danger or accident was uſed: but, notwithſtanding which, on the 17th of Auguſt, in what was conſidered as good landing, one of the boats, in coming into the paſſage, was overtaken by a ſucceſ-

ſion

ſion of heavy ſurfs, which threw her on one of the reefs, where ſhe parted in leſs than two minutes, and ſeven people were drowned. I was with ſeveral other officers within twenty yards of them, and with at leaſt thirty people beſide, and could render them very little aſſiſtance. Of the perſons who were drowned, there were two of the boat's crew, who belonged to the Sirius; three women convicts, who were coming from the ſhip in this boat, a child, and one convict man, who went off with many others to try to ſave the women. There were two women brought on ſhore, by the exertions of the people on the reef, who were, when landed, apparently dead, but recovered by the ſurgeons; one was mother of the child which was loſt; one convict man, who was exerting himſelf to ſave others, was himſelf brought on ſhore apparently drowned, but was alſo brought to again. The people who were loſt, were carried out by the outſet from the ſhore, which at a certain time of tide is ſo ſtrong that a boat can ſcarcely pull a-head againſt it, even when calm. This ſerves to convince me of the unfounded illiberality of an obſervation which I have ſeen in a certain publication, lately come

come out from England, wherein it is mentioned, when ſpeaking of this iſland, that there was a boat's crew drowned at a certain time, but that it was occaſioned by the imprudence of the midſhipman, who did not attend to the orders which were given him: yet certain it is every officer here, at this time, was fully ſatisfied it had not been in his power to obey, owing to the out-ſet abovementioned: and therefore it is equally certain, the reflection upon that gentleman's conduct was highly unjuſt. If there had been any act of imprudence committed at that time, it was not by the midſhipman, whoſe duty it was to obey orders, but by ſending in that narrow and intricate paſſage, one boat to meet another, where they muſt be in each other's way, and ſubject, by that means, (if a ſurf ſhould riſe at the moment) to very great danger.

The arrival of ſupplies for our relief at this very critical juncture, was truly comfortable and a ſtrong inſtance of the kindneſs of Divine Providence to us: for our great and indeed only reſource began to fail us very faſt, —the Mount Pitt birds, on which it may juſtly be ſaid we had for a very conſiderable time

time principally lived, were now very ſcarce; many people who went out to catch them, were frequently, after remaining a whole night on the ground, where they were, during the plentiful ſeaſon, ſo very numerous, contented to bring in ſix or eight birds, and were ſometimes unable to find one. The fiſh alſo failed us entirely; for the ſhips, during the time they were cruizing about the iſland and landing the proviſions, did not catch one fiſh: it will therefore appear, that had not theſe ſupplies arrived ſo timefully, or had they been detained ſix weeks longer, through any accident, or other cauſe, what a deplorable ſituation we ſhould have been reduced to! thank God, ſuch conſequences as muſt have attended it, were prevented by this providential relief, and the dejected gloom, and pale ſickly look, which was to be ſeen in every countenance, now gave way to a chearful and happy appearance of ſatisfaction.

In the month of January, 1791, finding it impoſſible to get any of the remaining ſtores out, which were under the lower and orlop decks of the wreck, I determined to attempt getting the guns out, which until then, I did not incline to try; the gun deck being in

ſo

ſo infirm a ſtate, I was ſuſpicious, that by moving the guns, which had hitherto (being houſed) hung chiefly by the bolts in the ſide, it might cauſe the deck to fall in, as the beams, from the opening of the ſhip's ſides, did but barely keep hold of the clamp, the bolts of the knees being all broken: had this deck fallen in upon the others, it would have prevented every endeavour to ſave ſuch ſtores as were under it, and which, from time to time, by the alterations which every heavy ſurf made on the wreck, we were ſometimes enabled to get at: however, after every thing, which there was any poſſibility of getting at, was ſaved, we began with the guns, and in a few days got every gun and carriage on ſhore, by means of a traveller upon a nine inch hawſer; there were only of our ordnance two carronades loſt, which were carried away by the fall of the maſts.

We had juſt compleated this buſineſs of the guns, when a ſail was diſcovered in the offing, which we all believed to be the Gorgon, that we had ſo long expected; but upon her nearer approach, we diſcovered it to be the Supply armed tender. She had been, upon her re-

turn

turn from Norfolk Iſland with the account of our misfortune, immediately diſpatched to Batavia; where Lieutenant Ball was directed to endeavour to hire a veſſel, and to load her with ſuch articles of proviſions as he could procure for the relief of the ſettlement: this ſervice Mr. Ball ſucceeded in; having procured a Dutch ſnow, of about 300 tons, and put on board ſuch proviſions as he could procure; conſiſting of beef, pork, flour, rice, and various hoſpital ſtores. The ſeaſon, at Batavia, while the Supply was there, was very ſickly; he loſt many of his men by fevers, and among the number was Mr. Newton Fowell, the ſecond lieutenant of the Sirius, who had been put on board to aſſiſt in bringing the veſſel, which might be hired, to Port Jackſon. I was exceeding concerned for the loſs of this young gentleman, who was a good, well diſpoſed, and promiſing young man. Mr. Roſs, the gunner of the Sirius, who had been left at Port Jackſon on duty, when ſhe ſailed for Norfolk Iſland, died alſo at Batavia: he had been put on board the Supply, in order to be landed at Norfolk Iſland, if ſhe ſhould be able to reach that place in her way to Batavia. After the return of the Supply to Port Jackſon, ſhe was found to require ſome repairs, which

which having been compleated, ſhe was ordered upon the ſervice wherein we now found her, viz. bringing a few ſtores for Norfolk Iſland, with orders to embark the remaining officers and crew of the Sirius, and to return with them to Port Jackſon. This information I received with joy, as our ſituation was now become exceedingly irkſome: we had been upon this ſmall iſland eleven months, and during great part of that time, through various cauſes, had been oppreſſed by feelings more diſtreſſing than I can find words to expreſs. On the 11th of February, I embarked, with the officers and ſhip's company, on board the Supply, having taken my leave of a place which had coſt me ſo much diſtreſs and vexation. We had fine weather during our paſſage to Port Jackſon, where we arrived on the 27th, and were kindly and hoſpitably received by all our friends there. I now underſtood from the governor, that he had entered into a contract with the maſter of the Dutch ſnow, for carrying the officers and ſhip's company of the Sirius to England; a piece of information which I did not by any means feel a pleaſure in hearing: for, anxious as I was to reach

reach England as ſoon as poſſible, I ſhould with much patience rather have waited the arrival of an Engliſh ſhip, than to have embarked under the direction, or at the diſpoſal, of a foreigner: however, preparations were then making for ſending us off as faſt as poſſible.

CHAPTER VI.

Great improvement of the country at Roſe-Hill.—Viciſſitude of the climate.—Norfolk-Iſland remarkably healthy.—A native runs away from the ſettlement.—Frequent viſits from the natives.—Governor Phillip wounded by the natives with a ſpear.—Natives again viſit the ſettlement.—Entertain the governor, &c. with a dance.—Decorate themſelves for that purpoſe.—Method of dancing deſcribed.—Muſic and ſinging.

AFTER my arrival at Port Jackſon, I went to Roſe Hill, where great improvements were carrying on; a conſiderable

town was laid out, many good buildings were erected, and roads were cut, with about two hundred and thirteen acres of land cleared for corn, and eighty acres for buildings and gardens. Roſe Hill is certainly a pretty ſituation, but the country will require much manure, much dreſſing, and good farmers to manage it, before good crops can be expected from it; the beſt they have ever had, I have been informed, has amounted only to ſix or ſeven to one, and this laſt ſeaſon has been little more than two to one, but that may in ſome meaſure be accounted for by there being a great ſcarcity of rain.

When the ſudden viciſſitudes of heat and cold are conſidered, we might be too apt to pronounce this country very unhealthy; but near four years experience has convinced us that it is not the caſe: it is no uncommon thing at Roſe Hill, and frequently at Sydney, for the thermometer to be in the morning at 56° or 60°; and by two hours, afternoon, at 100°, ſometimes 112°; and after ſun-ſet, down to 60° again; this is, with the thermometer expoſed to the air, in a ſhade, and not within the houſe. When I went laſt to Roſe Hill, I left Sydney at five o'clock in the

the morning, and rowed up the harbour, a great coat was then comfortable; at noon I walked over the cleared ground, the thermometer was then more than 100°.

Norfolk Iſland is alſo ſubject to ſuch ſudden changes, but is alſo remarkably healthy. I do not think I can give a ſtronger proof of the ſalubrity of the climate, than by obſerving, that I never ſaw the conſtitutions either of the human race or any other animal, more prolific in any part of the world; two children at a birth is no uncommon thing, and elderly women, who have believed themſelves long paſt the period of child-bearing, have repeatedly had as fine healthy ſtrong children as ever were ſeen. And there has but one old woman, who was ſickly before ſhe came to the country, and one infant, died of a natural diſeaſe on the iſland, ſince it has been ſettled.

I have ſome time ago mentioned the name of Bannelong, a native man, who had been taken in the lower part of the harbour, with another of the name of Coalby, who ſoon after made his eſcape. Bannelong had been kept in his ſhackle, and treated with ſo much

kindneſs, that it was now ſuppoſed he might be truſted with his liberty, without any fear of his leaving us; he was therefore, in the month of April, 1790, which was ſoon after we left Port Jackſon for Norfolk Iſland, ſet at liberty, and did not appear at all diſpoſed to leave the governor's houſe, or abſent himſelf from his new acquired friends; this appearance of ſatisfaction he feigned with ſucceſs for ſeveral days, for no perſon ſeemed to ſuſpect him; he at laſt, however, took French leave; having, after dark, one evening, ſtript himſelf of his very decent cloathing, left them behind, and walked off. Both he and Coalby were frequently ſeen by our fiſhing-boats, and were ſo familiar as to converſe with the people, who often invited them to come up to Sydney (the name by which the ſettlement is called,) but this invitation they were not much diſpoſed to accept until the governor in perſon ſhould invite them, and give them his promiſe that they ſhould not be detained; the governor did invite them, and promiſed to give them many things, of which they were very much in want. It was ſcarcely to be expected that

theſe

theſe people, who had been deprived of their liberty in ſo treacherous a manner, and had been ſo long detained from their families and connections, ſhould have had confidence enough to truſt their liberty again in our hands; however, as the governor and every other perſon in the ſettlement had ever been kind to them, they were inclined to depend on the governor's promiſe, and did come to Sydney; were kindly received, went from houſe to houſe, and ſaw all their old acquaintances; they received many little preſents, and returned to their friends when they thought proper. This confidential viſit from two men, who appeared to have ſome influence among their countrymen, ſoon brought about a more general intercourſe, and the next viſit from thoſe men brought the ſame favour from their wives and families, whoſe example was followed by many others; ſo that every gentleman's houſe was now become a reſting or ſleeping place for ſome of them every night; whenever they were preſſed for hunger, they had immediate recourſe to our quarters, where they generally got their bellies filled. They were now become exceed-

ingly fond of bread, which when we came here firſt, they could not bear to put into their mouths; and if ever they did, it was out of civility to thoſe who offered it; but now the little children had all learnt the words, *hungry*, *bread*; and would, to ſhew that they were hungry, draw in their belly, ſo as to make it appear quite empty. Coalby's wife had a young female child in her arms, about three or four months old; this little creature had a ligature round the little finger of the right hand, in order to ſeparate the two lower joints, which in the courſe of three weeks or a month it effected: I ſaw it juſt as the finger was about dropping off, but as it hung by a bit of ſkin, they begged Mr. White, the ſurgeon, to take it off, which he did, with a pair of ſciſſars, and which the child did not ſeem to feel. This taking off the finger of the right hand appeared to be a miſtake in the mother, who frequently pointed that it ſhould have been the left hand.

A ſhort time previous to this friendly and general viſiting from the natives, the governor, as I have already obſerved, in order to diſpoſe them

them the more to confide in us, went down the harbour himſelf, to ſee and converſe with our old friends Bannelong and Coalby, and to invite them to come to his houſe, where they ſhould get whatever they might be in want of; and be permitted to return when they pleaſed. The governor having received information that theſe two men with ſeveral other natives were in Collins's-Cove, went thither, accompanied by ſeveral other gentlemen, and they were all unarmed; this unfortunate want of neceſſary caution had very near proved fatal to the governor; the particulars of this accident were related to me by an officer who was of the party, and were, as near as I can recollect, as follows:

On Thurſday the 7th of September, the governor, with a few other gentlemen, went down to the look-out, in order to fix on a ſpot for erecting a column, or pyramid, as a mark, by which ſtrangers might, at ſea, the better know the harbour; and were returning, when they were met by a boat which had been landing a party of gentlemen, who intended walking along the coaſt to Broken-Bay: by the cockſwain of this boat, the go-

vernor was informed, that Mr. White, who was one of the above party, had ſeen Coalby and Bannelong, and had a long converſation with them; that theſe men enquired for every body they knew, and particularly for the governor; that they had ſent his excellency a piece of whale, which had been thrown on ſhore, and which they had been regaling themſelves upon; that Bannelong would go up to Sydney, if the governor would come for him. In conſequence of this information, the governor returned to the look-out, and got together every thing that he could find, which he thought would be acceptable to his old friends: he alſo took with him four muſkets, and went immediately to Collins's-Cove, where thoſe people had been ſeen. In their way they examined the muſkets, and found that only two of the four would ſtrike fire, and theſe they loaded: when they reached the place, they obſerved a number of the natives ſitting round a fire which was near the place where the dead whale lay; the governor ſtood up in the boat, and aſked in their language where Bannelong was; Bannelong anſwered, I am here; the governor then ſaid, I am

the governor, your father; (a name he wiſhed the governor to be known by when he lived with him.) The governor, after deſiring Captain Collins and Mr. Waterhouſe to remain in the boat, and to have the muſkets ready, landed, and walked up the beach with his arms extended to ſhew that he was unarmed, and that they might not be alarmed: they did not ſeem inclined to meet him; however he followed them into the wood, and one of them frequently called out governor and father; in conſequence of this, and having ſhook hands in a friendly manner, the governor returned to the boat, and deſiring one of the men to bring up ſome wine, beef, and bread, and a jacket or two, which had been brought on purpoſe, he went back with thoſe articles to them: on his holding up a bottle, one of them called out wine, and repeated ſeveral Engliſh words; two of the natives came forward and received the things, and one drank a little wine; they had likewiſe received from the governor a few knives. In a ſhort time, the governor came to the boat again, and mentioned all that had happened; obſerving at the ſame time, that Bannelong

and

and Coalby were not among the number: he aſked Captain Collins to walk up with him, and deſired Mr. Waterhouſe to ſtay by the boat. When they went up, Mr. Waterhouſe frequently heard one of the natives call to Bannelong, and informed him of what obſervations he made upon thoſe who remained in the boat, the people being employed in keeping her afloat upon her oars. Shortly after, one of the men came down from the governor, and informed Mr. Waterhouſe, that both Bannelong and Coalby were there, and that the former had frequently aſked for Mr. Waterhouſe, and the governor deſired he would come up, which he did. On his arrival, he obſerved a conſiderable number of the natives on each ſide, and eight or ten in front, all armed with their ſpears, except two, with whom the governor and Captain Collins were in converſation; Mr. Waterhouſe went up, but did not know Bannelong, until he was pointed out to him; he then ſhook hands with him and Coalby. Bannelong had at this time two jackets on, which he had received from the governor and Captain Collins; Coalby had alſo a jacket given him; after Bannelong had been aſked ſeveral queſtions,

queſtions, he took Mr. Waterhouſe round the neck and kiſſed him; theſe queſtions were relative to various circumſtances which happened while he lived with the governor, all of which he ſeemed to recollect very well: Coalby ſhook hands again with Mr. Waterhouſe, and begged him to put on the jacket which had been given, and which he held in his hand, not knowing how to put it on himſelf, which Mr. Waterhouſe did for him. Bannelong, on the governor's firſt meeting him, had a remarkable fine ſpear, which the governor aſked him for, but he either could not or would not underſtand him, but laid it down on the ground: during all this time, there was the greateſt appearance of harmony and friendſhip. However, the natives ſeemed cloſing round the party, which being obſerved, the governor propoſed going down to the boat, for they had by this time nearly formed a creſcent, and had the governor's party in the centre: there were now nineteen armed men near, and a conſiderable number in the wood out of ſight. The governor now told Bannelong that he would return in two days, and bring him the cloaths he uſed to wear when in his houſe, and would alſo bring him a

couple

of hatchets for himſelf and Coalby; with which promiſe they ſeemed well pleaſed, and often repeated that it might not be forgot. Juſt as the governor and his party were going, Bannelong pointed out and named ſeveral of the natives who were ſtrangers, one of whom the governor went up to and offered to ſhake his hands, at which the man ſeemed much terrified, and immediately ſeized the ſpear, which Bannelong had laid on the ground, fixed it on the throwing-ſtick, and diſcharged it with aſtoniſhing violence: he with all his aſſociates made off with the utmoſt precipitation. The ſpear entered the governor's right ſhoulder, juſt above the collar-bone, and came out about three inches lower down, behind the ſhoulder-blade. Mr. Waterhouſe, who was cloſe by the governor at the time, ſuppoſed that it muſt be mortal, for the ſpear appeared to him to be much lower down than it really was, and ſuppoſed, from the number of armed men, that it would be impoſſible for any of the party to eſcape to the boat. He turned round immediately to return to the boat, as he perceived Captain Collins to go that way, calling to the boat's crew to bring up the muſkets; the

governor

governor alſo attempted to run towards the boat, holding up the ſpear with both hands, to keep it off the ground, but owing to its great length, the end frequently took the ground and ſtopped him (it was about twelve feet long). Governor Phillip, in this ſituation, deſired Mr. Waterhouſe to endeavour, if poſſible, to take the ſpear out, which he immediately attempted, but obſerving it to be barbed, and the barb quite through, he ſaw it would be impoſſible to draw it out; he therefore endeavoured to break it, but could not: while he was making this attempt, another ſpear was thrown out of the wood, and took off the ſkin between Mr. Waterhouſe's fore-finger and thumb, which alarmed him a good deal, and he thinks added power to his exertions, for the next attempt, he broke it off. By this time, the ſpears flew pretty thick, one of which he obſerved to fall at Captain Collins's feet, while he was calling to the boat's crew: the governor attempted to pull a piſtol out of his pocket, but the ſpears flew ſo thick, that it was unſafe to ſtop: however he got it out and fired it, upon a ſuppoſition, that their knowing he had ſome fire-arms would deter them from

from any further hoſtility. The whole party got down to the boat without any further accident, and in two hours they arrived at the government-houſe, when the ſurgeons were ſent for: Mr. Balmain, who was the firſt that arrived, after examining the wound, made every body happy, by aſſuring them he did not apprehend any fatal conſequences from it; he extracted the point of the ſpear, and dreſſed the wound, and in ſix weeks the governor was perfectly recovered.

Immediately on the arrival of the governor at Sydney, it was judged neceſſary to ſend an armed party of marines towards Broken-bay, to eſcort the gentlemen who had walked that way back again; leſt the ſame hoſtile diſpoſition in the natives, ſhould incline them to make an attack on them on their return.

Before I left Port Jackſon, the natives were become very familiar and intimate with every perſon in the ſettlement; many of them now took up their reſt every night in ſome of the gentlemen's houſes; their very unprovoked attack on the governor and his party being paſſed over and almoſt forgot. We have frequently obſerved, ſince this familiar intercourſe took place, that they often had a dance amongſt

amongſt themſelves at night, on the lower part of Sydney-cove, where a ſmall houſe had been built by the governor's order, for their accommodation. It had been ſignified to ſome of the principal amongſt them, that we ſhould be glad to have an opportunity of ſeeing them dance, which they readily agreed to, and the following night was appointed, when the governor and a conſiderable number attended; every one being provided with arms of ſome kind; a caution which, notwithſtanding friendly appearances, was generally allowed to be neceſſary; for experience had convinced us that theſe people have a good deal of treachery in their diſpoſition. Preparatory to this exhibition, much attention was paid to the decorating themſelves; they were all Adams and Eves, without even a fig-leaf, but without their dignity. The young women were employed with all their art in painting the young men, who were chiefly ornamented with ſtreaks of white, done with pipe clay, and in different forms, according to the taſte of the man himſelf, or to that of the lady who adorned him: no fop preparing for an aſſembly was ever more deſirous of making his perſon

perſon irreſiſtibly beautiful. This paint, ſo much in uſe among them, could not be applied without a little moiſture, and the lady, in drawing thoſe marks on the face, which were ſo eſſential a part of the decoration, I obſerved frequently to ſpit in the face of her friend, whom ſhe was employed in adorning, in order to make the white clay mark the ſtronger. When they were all prepared, we walked down to the place appointed, after dark, for they prefer taking their amuſement by fire-light; we found ſeveral fires lighted, and a conſiderable number of people aſſembled. We walked round to ſee that there were no armed lurkers among the buſhes.

The dancers being ready, we were placed in a ſemicircle, by Bannelong and Coalby, who ſeemed to have the chief authority and direction. The dance was begun by a few young boys, and was encreaſed by men and women, chiefly by the former, until their number amounted from twenty to twenty-ſix. Their dance was truly wild and ſavage, yet, in many parts, there appeared order and regularity: one man would frequently ſingle himſelf out from the dance, and running round

round the whole of the performers, ſing out in a loud voice, uſing ſome expreſſions in one particular tone of voice which we could not underſtand: he would then join the dance, in which it was obſerved that certain parties alternately led forward to the front, and there exhibited with their utmoſt ſkill and agility, all the various motions which, witk them, ſeemed to conſtitute the principal beauties of dancing: one of the moſt ſtriking was, that of placing their feet very wide apart, and by an extraordinary exertion of the muſcles of the thighs and legs, moving the knees in a trembling and very ſurprizing manner, ſuch as none of us could imitate; which ſeemed to ſhew that it required much practice to arrive at any degree of perfection in this ſingular motion. There appeared a good deal of variety in their different dances; in one of which they paired themſelves, and frequently danced back to back; they then changed ſuddenly and faced each other: ſometimes all the performers ſat down on the ground with their feet under them, and at a particular word, or order, they all raiſed themſelves up: this motion they performed without any aſſiſtance from

the hands; now they ran back in direct rows, then advanced in the ſame order; again they would form a circle, with ſome diſtinguiſhed perſon in the center, and ſometimes the whole of the performers would appear with a green bough in their hands, which they held up in a conſpicuous manner. In all the different figures which they performed, I obſerved that they generally finiſhed by certain numbers of their principal dancers advancing to the front, and going through that favourite part of the dance, the quivering motion of the knees; whenever this was done, the whole company faced to the front and went through the ſame motions; but it was noticed that ſome were more frequently in the front than others, and thoſe, I concluded, were ſuch as had great confidence in their own ſkill in the execution of this very difficult part of the performance, and no doubt were vain enough to outſhine in their ability the reſt of the company. On the whole, this exhibition was well worth ſeeing; and this was the firſt opportunity that had offered for us to ſee any thing of the kind, ſince we had been in the country. Their muſic conſiſted of two ſticks of very hard

hard wood, one of which the muſician held upon his breaſt, in the manner of a violin, and ſtruck it with the other, in good and regular time; the performer, who was a ſtout ſtrong voiced man, ſung the whole time, and frequently applied thoſe graces in muſic, the piano and forte; he was aſſiſted by ſeveral young boys and girls, who ſat at his feet, and by their manner of croſſing the thighs, made a hollow between them and their belly, upon which they beat time with the flat of their hand, ſo as to make a kind of ſound which will be better underſtood from the manner of its being produced, than from any verbal deſcription: theſe children alſo ſung with the chief muſical performer, who ſtood up the whole time, and ſeemed to me to have the moſt laborious part of the performance. They very frequently, at the concluſion of the dance, would apply to us for our opinions, or rather for marks of our approbation of their performance; which we never failed to give by often repeating the word *boojery*, which ſignifies good; or *boojery caribberie*, a good dance. Theſe ſigns of pleaſure in us ſeemed to give them great

ſatisfaction, and generally produced more than ordinary exertions from the whole company of performers in the next dance.

CHAPTER VII.

Captain Hunter leaves Port Jackſon in the Waakſamheyd tranſport.—In danger amongſt ſome iſlands.—Stewart's iſlands diſcovered.—Diſcover a cluſter of iſlands.—Name them Lord Howe's groupe.—The natives deſcribed.—Anchor at the Duke of York's Iſland.—Attempt to procure water.—Are attacked by the natives.—A few ſhots fired.—The natives diſperſed.—A reconciliation effected.—Natives deſcribed.—Weapons.—Ornaments, &c.—Produce and ſoil.—Leave the Duke of York's Iſland.—Natives from the Admiralty Iſlands viſit the ſhip.—Their canoes deſcribed.—Anchor at Hummock Iſland.—Refreſhments procured.—Viſited by the Raja.—A quarrel enſues.—Several of the natives killed.—

killed.—Articles of barter in requeſt.—Canoes deſcribed.—Leave Hummock Iſland.—Anchor at Batavia.

ON the 27th of March, 1791, we left Sydney-cove, in the Waakſamheyd tranſport, and ſailed down the harbour, accompanied by the governor, and moſt of the civil and military officers in the ſettlement. When we paſſed the lower point of the Cove, all the marines and the New South Wales corps, who were off duty, came down and cheered our people, by way of taking leave, and wiſhing us a good paſſage: never, upon any ſervice, did there a better, or a more friendly underſtanding ſubſiſt between different corps, than had ever been the caſe between the ſeamen and ſoldiers employed upon this. When we came near the lower part of the harbour, our friends took leave, and ſoon after, the wind ſetting in from the ſea, we were obliged to anchor until the next morning, when a land wind carried us clear out. The maſter of the ſhip had orders from Governor Phillip to call at Norfolk Iſland, in order to take on board the diſpatches of Lieutenant-Governor Roſs; but this order

was meant only in caſe it could be done without any material loſs of time: three weeks, however, we perſevered in endeavouring to reach it, and had arrived within twenty-five leagues of it, when the wind ſet in ſtrong from the eaſtward; we therefore ſteered to the northward, intending to paſs between the New Hebrides and Nova Caledonia; but in this intention we were diſappointed.

We made the Iſle of Pines on the 23d of April, and as I had always underſtood it to be a ſmall inconſiderable ſpot, with many tall pine-trees upon it, we all concluded, that, what afterwards proved really the iſland, was the land which Captain Cook had called the Prince of Wales's Foreland, and is the ſouth-weſt part of New Caledonia. This miſtake had nearly proved of fatal conſequences to us, for after we had coaſted along for a few leagues, land was diſcovered a-head; upon which the courſe was altered: ſoon afterwards, more land was ſeen ſtill a-head, and as we hauled up to avoid it, more land and broken keys or low iſlands were diſcovered a-head, and as far to windward as the eye could reach; we conſequently hauled our wind, and ſtood towards it, in order to diſcover

cover our ſituation with more certainty: we ſoon found that we had ſailed into a very deep bay, formed between the Iſle of Pines to the eaſtward, and a moſt dangerous reef on the weſt, which extended from the ſouth-weſt point of New Caledonia, not leſs than ten or eleven leagues, and was nearly that diſtance in a ſouth-weſt direction from the high part of the Iſle of Pines: in this ſituation there was no alternative; for we muſt either beat to windward to go round the reef, find a channel through it, or go on ſhore; the firſt, therefore, we determined to attempt, ſo we made all the ſail the ſhip could bear, and ſtood towards the reef. As ſoon as it was dark, and we thought ourſelves near enough to it, we tacked, and kept every perſon upon deck during the night. We kept working to windward all night, and at day-light in the morning of the 24th, we obſerved with no ſmall degree of pleaſure, that we had gained ground to windward. In the afternoon being fairly clear of this ſituation, we bore away to the weſtward.

The Iſle of Pines, ſo far from being an inconſiderable ſpot, as I had believed, is not leſs than 14 or 15 miles over in a ſouth-eaſt

and north-weſt direction; it is high and remarkable in the middle, being quite a pointed hill, ſloping towards the extremities, which are very low; the low land had many tall pine-trees upon it; theſe trees, in length, ſeemed exceedingly to ſurpaſs thoſe of Norfolk Iſland, but their branches did not appear to extend ſo far from the body of the tree.

On the 10th of May, we ſaw a cluſter of ſmall iſlands, five in number; they were well covered with trees, amongſt which we thought we obſerved the cocoa-nut. Their latitude is 8° 26′ ſouth, and their longitude, 163° 18′ eaſt. I called them Stewart's Iſlands, as a mark of my reſpect for the honourable Keith Stewart.

The two largeſt of the iſlands juſt mentioned I judged to be about three miles in length; whether they were inhabited or not we could not diſcover: we paſſed to windward of them, and not being ſituated conveniently for making diſcoveries, or exploring unknown lands, we made the beſt of our way to the northward.

On the 14th, at day-light in the morning, we ſaw land, and at ſunriſe we obſerved this land to be a number of iſlands; ſome were of conſiderable

conſiderable extent, and many of a ſmaller ſize. Thirty-two were diſtinctly counted from the maſt-head, bearing from north-weſt half north to north-eaſt half eaſt; many of them were conſiderably diſtant, ſo far as to make it probable that we did not ſee the whole of this extenſive groupe. At ten o'clock we perceived ſix or ſeven canoes coming off, with large triangular ſails; a little after noon, one of them, with nine men in it, came up with us, although we did not ſhorten ſail: we could not perſuade them to come along-ſide, or touch the ſhip, but we threw a few beads and nails, and other trifles, into their boat, with which they appeared much pleaſed; and in return, they threw ſome pieces of cocoa-nut on board; at one o'clock a freſh breeze ſprung up, and they left us. The men in this boat were a ſtout, clean, well made people, of a dark copper colour; their hair was tied in a knot on the back of their head, and they ſeemed to have ſome method of taking off their beards; for they appeared to us as if clean ſhaved, but they had an ornament, conſiſting of a number of fringes, like an artificial beard, which was faſtened on between the noſe and mouth,

and

and cloſe under the noſe; to that beard hung a row of teeth, which gave them the appearance of having a mouth lower than their natural one; they had holes run through the ſides of the noſe into the paſſage, into which, as well as through the ſeptum, were thruſt pieces of reed or bone; their arms and thighs were marked in the manner deſcribed by Captain Cook, of ſome of the natives of the iſlands he viſited in theſe ſeas, called tatowing; and ſome were painted with red and white ſtreaks; they wore a wrapper round their middle. Their canoe was about 40 feet long; it was badly made, and had an out-rigger. The iſlands appeared thickly covered with wood, among which the cocoa-nut was very diſtinguiſhable; their latitude is 5° 30′ ſouth, the longitude from 159° 14′ eaſt to 159° 37′ eaſt. I called them Lord Howe's Groupe. Our water was now become ſhort, and we had yet a long voyage before us; it was therefore abſolutely neceſſary to look for ſome ſupply of that article, and as we were only victualed for ſixteen weeks when we left Port Jackſon, and had already been eight at ſea, we could not on that account loſe much time, leſt we ſhould meet with calms as we came near

near the Line. Before we went any farther to the northward, I was determined to try the coaſt of New-Britain; we therefore ſtood over for that land, intending, if poſſible, to find an anchoring place. On the morning of the 22d of May, we came within three or four leagues of the ſhore; it then fell calm, and the boat was ſent in ſhore with Mr. Keltie, the maſter of the Sirius, who had directions to make a certain ſignal if he found anchorage: Mr. Keltie reported, that the part of the coaſt which he had been in with, was ſtreight, and had no appearance of any ſort of bay, or the ſmalleſt probability of anchorage. The next ſtep that was to be purſued, was to examine the Duke of York's Iſland, and on the night of the 22d, we ran off the eaſt point of it, and brought-to till day-light.

The next morning, the boat was ſent in ſhore to ſound; the ſhip was at this time about a mile and a half off. Many canoes came off, with every appearance of friendly diſpoſition; we gave them a few trifles, and they ſeemed to inſiſt on making a return for every thing they received; cocoa-nuts, yams, and bananas, were held out on the point of a long

a long ſpear, or pole, for they ſeemed afraid to touch the ſhip; the boat which was ſounding endeavoured to make them underſtand that we wanted water, and ſhewed a ſmall keg, intimating by ſigns that they wanted it filled; the people in one of the canoes went to the boat, received the keg, went immediately on ſhore, filled it, and brought it back to the boat: the officer then gave them another ſmall keg, which he meant as a preſent, but it was immediately ſent on ſhore by another canoe: in the mean time a breeze ſprung up, the boat ſteered along ſhore and the ſhip followed: the people who had taken the laſt keg, after having filled it, followed our boat with the utmoſt ſpeed, came up with her and delivered it; this I thought a ſtriking proof of the honeſty of theſe people, and it will particularly appear ſo, when it is conſidered, that the keg was hooped with iron.

We anchored in a bay on the weſtern ſide of the iſland at noon on the 23d, and in the afternoon, we ſent the boats armed to look for freſh water; a vaſt multitude of the natives were by this time aſſembled on the ſhore, and the bay was filled with canoes; in conſequence of which we got the ſhip's guns

guns loaded and ready; (ſhe mounted ſix three-pounders) but although they were exceedingly clamorous, they were ſtill apparently well diſpoſed; they ſhewed the officer in the boat how to find water by digging holes in the ſandy beach, in the manner frequently practiſed in the Weſt-Indies; we followed their advice, and ſunk a caſk in the ſand; the water flowed into it, but was too much mixed with the ſea water to be uſed. Some of the natives, however, afterwards pointed out another place, from which the freſh water iſſued in a conſiderable ſtream, out of chaſms in the rocky face of a high bank: this diſcovery ſet our people upon farther ſearches, and they found ſeveral ſuch diſcharges from the ſide of the bank, enough to anſwer our purpoſe, if the natives remained quiet and friendly.

This buſineſs I was particularly deſirous we might be able to effect, without being under the neceſſity of convincing them of our ſuperiority in arms. The firſt day was ſpent in endeavouring to ſhew them, that we were deſirous of a friendly intercourſe with them, and that we wanted nothing but water, which they could well ſpare: however,

ever, on diſcovering that water was to be had, we were of courſe determined to have as much as might be neceſſary for our purpoſe, and by ſuch means as might be found neceſſary and effectual. This firſt night there was a very ſtrict look-out kept, as well by the natives as by us; they had a regular watch-word, which they ſung out in a very pleaſing and muſical manner, and it was anſwered by thoſe on the next poſt, and ſo all round the ſkirt of the wood. The next morning we loaded one boat with empty caſks, and had the other armed, to lie off the ſhore and cover the people employed filling water; the ſhip's guns were loaded with round and grape ſhot, and were within leſs than two cables length of the watering-place; twelve men, with ſmall arms, attended on ſhore with the waterers. The watering buſineſs was now begun, and might have ſatisfied the natives what our buſineſs was there; however, their numbers increaſed to ſuch a degree, all armed, and they were ſo very troubleſome, that very little work could be done in the watering. An old man, who was powdered all over with a white powder, and who ſeemed to poſſeſs great

great authority and influence amongſt his countrymen, diſpoſed them to be more and more troubleſome; preſents were offered him, but he rejected every thing with a very ſurly and determined air; in ſhort, he ſeemed reſolved that we ſhould not fill water, or remain upon their territory; he carried every appearance of an intention to diſpute the point by force; every means were uſed to pleaſe this old fellow, but without effect; at laſt ſome ſtones were thrown from a ſling, but this was not done until the principal part of the natives had retired to ſome diſtance from the place where our people were employed; the men who were armed for the protection of the waterers, ſtood the whole time with their arms ready to fire at a moment's notice, and the natives, ignorant of what the muſquets were, had certainly taken them for clubs. Some of the ſtones, which they threw, came with the force of a ſhot from a gun among the ſailors. The conſequence of this unmerited attack was, that the officer was obliged to fire, the covering boat fired, and a few ſhot were fired from the ſhip: at this time, there were thirty or forty canoes about the ſhip, full of people; their terror

terror and conſternation at the noiſe, and probably the effect of the guns, was ſuch, that many leaped from their boats overboard, and ſwam under water as far as they were able; ſuch guns as were fired from the ſide on which the canoes were, were pointed well over them, being more intended to intimidate than deſtroy. This firing occaſioned a general diſperſion of the natives, and the filling of water was carried on with eaſe and expedition; we received on board that afternoon about ſeven tons. The next morning, before the boats went on ſhore, we fired a few grape ſhot into the woods, and the boats landed without ſeeing any of the natives; at the ſame time we warped the ſhip within a cable's length of the watering-place, and ſecured her head and ſtern for covering the party on ſhore; the covering boat was directed to fire whenever any of the natives were ſeen in the woods over the watering party, which in the courſe of the day, they had frequent occaſion to do; many canoes came into the bay this day, but kept at an awful diſtance, holding up green boughs as a ſignal of peace and amity; to ſome we made ſigns to go away; to others, who ventured

tured a little nearer, we ſhewed ſigns of friendſhip, and made them underſtand, that our firing was occaſioned by their ſlinging ſtones among our people, who were watering: after theſe hoſtilities, our watering went on without the ſmalleſt interruption, except that the covering boat had occaſion ſometimes to fire a few muſquets into the woods over the watering place. In four days we compleated our water, and on the laſt evening, as the ſailors were coming from the ſhore, a number of the natives from the woods right above the watering place, came down to the beach with green boughs in their hands, bringing with them cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, &c. accompanied by a ſong of friendſhip: they ſeemed earneſtly to wiſh for a reconciliation, and took every means in their power to teſtify their concern for what had happened: a boat was ſent on ſhore to meet them, with a green branch in the bow, and the boat's crew were deſired to ſpread open their arms when they came near the beach, to ſhew they were well diſpoſed to peace. When the boat landed, the natives retired back a little, but not out of ſight, having piled up upon the beach their peace-offering, which

conſiſted of yams, cocoa-nuts, plantains, bananas, ſugar-cane, and ſome other articles: on the top of this pile was laid a ſmall living male and female dog, with their mouths and feet tied: in the middle of the heap was ſtuck in the ſand, a young tree of the palm kind, upon a branch of which were hung a number of braded lines, like what is called by ſeamen, *ſennit*, and much of the ſame colour, being made of the bark of a particular tree: what this could mean we were wholly at a loſs to comprehend, unleſs, as the head of this young tree was deſignedly bent down by the lines above-mentioned, it was meant as a token of ſubmiſſion; be that as it might, they received the boat's crew, &c. with every demonſtration of a true concern for what had happened; and I fear and believe they had much cauſe to be ſorry, for I think ſome muſt have loſt their lives by the grape ſhot from the ſhip. After peace had been re-eſtabliſhed on ſhore, the conk ſhell was ſounded, which is the ſignal whereby they aſſemble conſiderable numbers; and in a very ſhort time, they appeared coming from all parts of the wood round the bay, and were met by thoſe who had been the means

of

of bringing about a reconciliation, with a ſong of friendſhip, in which the whole joined, and which was really harmonious and very pleaſing: the canoes crowded the bay from different parts of the iſland, and were as familiar as ever, except that they would not now venture on board, which many had done before this quarrel: every boat brought a green bough, that was conſpicuouſly held up; they alſo brought many things to barter, and were pleaſed with ſuch trifles as we had to give them in return. They are, I believe, the only people in thoſe ſeas, who do not ſet a value upon iron work, in preference to any other thing; beads or looking-glaſſes they were not much pleaſed with, but rags of white linen, ſtrips of ſcarlet cloth, or any thing of gay colours, they were very anxious to have: nails they would not accept at all.

The natives of the Duke of York's Iſland are a ſtout, robuſt, well made people, of a light copper colour; I ſaw none who could be called black; they go entirely naked; the hair is woolly, but it is ſo managed by ſome ſort of greaſe or ointment, and a white or red powder with which they dreſs it, that it hangs on ſome like ſo many candle-wicks,

or rather like the thrums of a new mop reverſed, or turned upſide down; they are generally as fully powdered as a beau dreſſed for an aſſembly; ſome have their hair of a yellow, ſun-burnt colour, others quite red, as if powdered wholly with the true marechall; none are ſeen with the hair of its natural colour. This yellow or red appearance, I believe, may be occaſioned by this univerſal method of powdering, for the powder ſeems to be made from burnt ſhells, or coral, and is really a kind of lime; they generally carry a ſmall gourd or box filled with it about them, and when they are hoſtilely diſpoſed, they frequently take a quantity of this powder into the hollow of the hand, from which, with a ſtrong blaſt from the mouth, they blew it before them; and at a ſmall diſtance it has exactly the appearance of firing gunpowder, and no doubt is meant as a token of defiance. Their chief, upon hoſtile occaſions, powdered his body all over, ſo that it was no difficult matter to diſcover him; they alſo upon ſuch occaſions painted their faces red; ſome had marks upon their arms and ſhoulders, occaſioned by ſcarifying thoſe parts in long ſtripes, and letting the ſore riſe above the

the ſurface of the ſkin; they frequently wore a bone or reed thruſt through the ſeptum of the noſe, and, like the natives of Lord Howe's Groupe, had alſo holes cut through the wings of the noſe, into which were fixed ſhort pieces of hollow reed, as ladies wear wires to keep the ears open when newly bored; into theſe hollows or rings they occaſionally ſtuck long pieces of reed, which are no doubt conſidered by them as ornamental. The men in general were well looking people, but ſuch of their women as I ſaw were very ordinary. The weapons uſed by the people of this iſland were lances of different kinds, ſome were made of a kind of ebony, or hard wood, about ten feet long, frequently ornamented with feathers of different colours at the upper end; others were made of bamboo, pointed with hard wood: the lance is thrown by hand, but they had not the uſe of the throwing ſtick, like the natives of New South Wales: they alſo, in their quarrels, uſed the ſling for throwing ſtones, which appears to be made of ſome tough dried leaf, ſeveral times doubled; the ſtrings were manufactured from ſome ſoft, ſilky, and fibrous plant; they throw a round hard

pebble, of which they generally carried a ſmall nett full about them; the ſtones were about the ſize of a ſmall fowl's egg, and flew with much force, and great exactneſs from the ſling: they had alſo a long unhandy kind of club. They uſed, in fiſhing, a fiſhing ſpear, ſmall ſeine netts, and hooks and lines; their hooks were of tortoiſe-ſhell, from which circumſtance there can be no doubt but they have either turtle in their neighbourhood, or the tortoiſe upon the iſland. They had a kind of muſical inſtrument, with which they ſometimes, in their canoes alongſide, endeavoured to amuſe us; it was compoſed of a number of hollow reeds of different lengths, faſtened together, but they did not ſeem to be very expert in proportioning their lengths, or tuning them to harmony: ſound, not concord, ſeemed to be all they expected from it; they blew into the mouth of the different reeds by drawing the inſtrument acroſs their lips, and in that manner they produced their ſounds: their vocal muſic was far more harmonious, although there was not much variety in it. Thoſe who were conſidered as people of diſtinction were always to be found in a better ſort of boat than common; and I obſerved,

obſerved, that when any canoe came near the ſhip with people of diſtinction on board, the higher ranks were always to be known by a man ſitting in the middle of the boat, who held a wooden inſtrument in his hand, reſembling in ſhape a common paddle, but handſomely carved and painted, with its handle finiſhed ſomething like the hilt of a ſword.

When thoſe people were diſpoſed to be kind and friendly, they ſung frequently out in one particular tone, in which, if there were five hundred together, the niceſt ear could not diſcover one to differ in the tone or particular note; and immediately after they all mimicked the barking of a dog: this was meant by them as a *certain proof* of their friendly diſpoſition. Before we had cauſe to quarrel with them many came on board and were ſhaved, an operation with which they were much pleaſed.

This iſland, by its appearance from the ſea, I judged to be about ten miles long, in a ſouth-ſouth-weſt and north-north-eaſt direction; it is not high, nor can it be called low land, but appears, when near it, of moderate height and flat: it is well covered with

wood, and along the ſea ſhore were to be ſeen many huts of the natives, which were ſmall and neatly made; they were chiefly built of bamboo, and generally ſituated under the ſhade of a grove of cocoa-nut trees, with a fence or railing before them, within which the ground was well cleared and trodden, which gave their little habitations a very neat and cleanly appearance: I examined whilſt we lay there ſeveral neat and well fenced incloſures, in which were the plantain, banana, yam, ſugar cane, and ſeveral other articles, which they ſeem to take ſome pains to cultivate. In ſhort, from what we could diſcover in the little time we remained there, I may venture to pronounce the iſland a perfect garden, as far as it can with propriety be called ſo in the hands of a people, who, no doubt, truſt chiefly to nature, and who are ignorant of the means of aſſiſting her, in the improvement of thoſe advantages, which ſhe has ſo bountifully beſtowed upon them.

Although our time here was ſo ſhort, we had an opportunity of knowing that this iſland produced cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, bananas, ſugar-cane, betle-nut, mangos, bread-fruit, and guavas. There are alſo dogs,

hogs,

hogs, and the common fowls, and ſome ſpices, (the nutmeg I ſaw.) Moſt of the natives chew the betle, and with it uſed the chenam, and a leaf, as practiſed in the Eaſt-Indies; by which the mouth appeared very red, and their teeth, after a time, became black.

Their canoes were neatly made, and of various ſizes, with an outrigger to balance them.

On the 27th of May in the morning, we prepared for ſailing; before we got under way, two Engliſh pointers, male and female, which had been given to the maſter of the ſhip at Port Jackſon, were ſent on ſhore, and given to a party of the natives, who ſeemed highly delighted with them; a cock and hen were alſo given to them. At ten o'clock we ſailed out of the bay.

At day-light of the 31ſt, we ſaw much land to the northward and weſtward. Five large canoes came off from the neareſt iſland, in each of which were eleven men; ſix paddled, and five ſtood up in the center of the boat, who appeared to be of the better ſort, being painted and ornamented, and ſeemed as if intended for war; but when they came near, they ſhewed no hoſtile appearance: we

invited

invited them by ſigns to come on board, but they would not venture near the ſhip; they held up various articles, which they ſeemed deſirous of exchanging; ſuch as lines, ſhells, ornaments of different kinds, and bundles of darts or arrows: they were a ſtout well-looking people, rather darker than the natives of the Duke of York's Iſland; their hair appeared woolly, and was knotted or tied upon the top of their head; they wore a wrapper round their waiſt. One of them made various motions for ſhaving, by holding up ſomething in his hand, with which he frequently ſcraped his cheek and chin; this led me to conjecture, that ſome European ſhip had been lately amongſt them, and I thought it not improbable, that it might have been Monſ. de la Peyrouſe, in his way to the northward from Botany-bay. Their canoes appeared from forty to fifty feet long, were neatly made, and turned a little up at the extremities; there was a ſtage which lay acroſs the midſhips of the boat, and projected out ſome diſtance on one ſide; it was bent upwards a little at the outer end, to prevent its dipping in the water, by the motion of the boat; this ſtage ſeemed intended for the warriors

warriors to uſe their weapons upon: on the oppoſite ſide, was fitted in a different manner, an out-rigger to balance the boat; three of the rowers ſat before and three abaft the ſtage, ſo that thoſe intended for battle were not at all incommoded by them. A heavy black ſquall coming on at this time, they all puſhed for the land.

Having now got to the weſtward of the Admiralty Iſlands, I conſidered myſelf clear of St. George's Channel; and I agree perfectly with Captain Carteret, in thinking it a very ſafe, and (to ſhips bound northward, which want water,) a very convenient navigation.

On the 11th of July, neceſſity obliged us to reduce the allowance of water; the whole allowance now to each man for all purpoſes, cooking, drinking, &c. was two purſer's quarts for twenty-four hours, and the weather was exceedingly ſultry, which made it the more diſtreſſing. On the 13th, I found it neceſſary, from the very unfavourable proſpect before us, to call together my own officers, and the maſter of the ſhip, and to conſult upon the moſt eligible plan to be purſued, for enabling us to reach ſome port or ſettlement, where it might be poſſible to obtain

obtain ſome ſupply of proviſions and water, for the relief of one hundred and twenty-one men, the number now on board this ſmall veſſel. The general opinion was, that it would be highly imprudent in the preſent reduced ſtate of our proviſions and water, to perſevere any longer in an attempt to reach the ſtrait of Macaſſar, in the face of freſh weſterly winds and a ſtrong eaſterly current; particularly, in a veſſel ſo very ill conſtructed for working to windward; and what rendered it ſtill more neceſſary to give up ſuch an attempt in our ſituation was, that the maſter of the ſhip, (who had been a number of years in the Dutch ſervice among the Molucca Iſlands) aſſured me, in the preſence of ſome of the officers, that he did not know of any one place in our route, ſhort of Batavia, where any ſupply for our numbers could be had: accordingly, we bore away to the northward.

On the 9th of Auguſt, we made an iſland, which Captain Carteret ſaw from his anchorage on the ſouth coaſt of Mindanao, and called Hummock Iſland. In the afternoon a boat was ſeen coming off, with twelve perſons on board, and a white flag flying; we

ſtood

ſtood towards them, and anſwered their ſignal with a white flag at the enſign ſtaff; they came within a little diſtance of the ſhip, and aſked a variety of queſtions, whether we came from *Ternate*, (a ſmall iſland among the Moluccas, on which the Dutch have a factory) and if we were going to Batavia; to which they were anſwered in the affirmative; the converſation was carried on in the Malay language, of which the maſter of the ſhip had ſome knowledge, and as he had for a part of his crew twelve or fourteen Javaneſe, who all ſpoke that language, and who alſo ſpoke Dutch, we could be at no loſs to be underſtood, or to underſtand thoſe with whom we converſed. Dutch colours were hoiſted to confirm the anſwer given: from this boat we learnt, that they were upon intimate and friendly terms with the Dutch, and that we might have as much water, wood, and various articles of refreſhment as we wanted. They deſired to have a note from the maſter of the ſhip to the Raja, by whom theſe iſlands were governed, which was given them, with ſuch information as might be neceſſary.

The next morning we ſtood in for Hummock Iſland, and ſent a boat in ſhore to ſearch for

for anchorage, which ſhe very ſoon made the ſignal for having found; and at noon we came to about one mile from the ſhore. A ſhort time before we got into anchorage, a boat came off with Dutch colours flying, and brought a note from the Raja to the maſter, written in the Malay characters, ſignifying, that we ſhould have what we wanted.

In the afternoon we ſent a boat to look for water, which was found in great abundance under the high land near the north-eaſt point of the iſland; we went immediately to work to water the ſhip, and very ſoon had a number of canoes from the ſhore, on board, with a variety of refreſhments, which we were very much in want of; a briſk trade was carried on for poultry, goats, fruits of various kinds, honey, ſago, and tobacco; but what we wanted principally was rice, to iſſue to the ſailors at ſea, being now exceedingly ſhort of every ſpecies of victualling. Thoſe who were employed on ſhore were kindly treated by the natives, and every thing bore the moſt friendly and promiſing appearance. This day the Raja, according to previous information, which he had given, came on board in a large boat, and did us the honour

of

of a viſit; this boat was covered with an awning of ſplit bamboo; he was attended by the perſon next in authority, and a conſiderable number of people, and was, on his arrival, ſaluted with five guns. Upon this occaſion, it was thought neceſſary to have a party of ten men armed, placed on the top of the round houſe abaft, where they continued during the Raja's viſit. The Raja and his attendants were, on coming on board, led down to the cabin, and he had every mark of civility and attention ſhewn to him: on his taking leave, he was preſented by the maſter of the ſhip with a very handſome piece of ſilk, and on embarking in his boat, was ſaluted with a volley of muſquetry. While he remained on board much converſation paſſed between him and the maſter of the ſhip, but it being carried on in the Malay language, I could only collect, that the Raja was ſtrongly preſſed to aſſiſt us with a quantity of rice, or paddy, (which is the rice in huſk.) He ſhewed us, while in the cabin, that he was ſupported in his authority over theſe iſlands by the Dutch Eaſt-India Company, by producing his written appointment, which he had brought with him for that purpoſe:

poſe: this writing I looked at, but being in the Dutch language, I did not underſtand it, but obſerved, that it was ſubſcribed by a number of officers in the Company's ſervice; I alſo perceived it was ſubſcribed by a very reſpectable officer in the naval ſervice of the States, with whom I had the pleaſure of being a little acquainted the laſt time I was at the Cape of Good Hope: ſo that the intereſt of the Dutch Company ſeemed to be well eſtabliſhed in theſe iſlands.

When the Raja left us, he promiſed to be on board the next day, and ſaid, he would bring with him the articles that we were in want of. All this time we were buſily employed in getting water on board, and refitting the rigging; intending, as ſoon as the water was compleated, to employ one day in cutting wood.

The next day, in the afternoon, the Raja again came on board, but, to our very great diſappointment, inſtead of the expected ſupply, he produced four ſmall baſkets of ſago powder, and one bag of paddy, which would ſcarcely have maintained two men for a week; this return for the civilities he received the day before, was by no means a proper one, particularly

particularly as I was told he had been given to underſtand, that we were much in want of proviſions, and he had been greatly preſſed for a quantity of paddy, ſufficient to ſerve two hundred men, until we could reach Batavia, to which place he was told we were going; and he was alſo informed, that it ſhould be paid for in bar iron and other articles. Our demand was more than perhaps might have been neceſſary, but it was made large from an opinion that we might not get near the quantity applied for. We had reaſon to believe, that the iſland could well furniſh the ſupply we had aſked for, without any inconvenience to the inhabitants; for eight hundred weight had been purchaſed out of a common boat the day before, for a few pieces of bar iron, and the natives appeared to make more uſe of ſago and fruits than of paddy: the maſter of the ſhip ſhewed ſome diſpleaſure, and I own, (if he had made our wants well underſtood the day before, which I had my doubts of) not without cauſe: he came to me at the gangway, and told me he intended to detain the Raja until he ſent ſome of his boats on ſhore for the paddy wanted: I adviſed him againſt any

violent meaſures, leſt our wants had not been perfectly underſtood; and that I did not ſee that it could, in our preſent ſituation, anſwer any good end: at this time we had a boat and ſeveral people on ſhore. I recommended to him to endeavour to make the Raja underſtand, that unleſs he ſent for the ſupply we had aſked, and he had promiſed, that he, as commander of the Company's ſhip, would repreſent his conduct to the governor and council at Batavia, who would certainly take notice of it; I thought a threat of that ſort might anſwer our purpoſe better than the means he propoſed: for we were in no reſpect prepared for a quarrel with thoſe people, the meaneſt of whom wore a creſs or dagger conſtantly by his ſide, and the decks were at that time almoſt full of them; many of our people were alſo upon deck, but wholly unarmed and off their guard.

The maſter of the ſhip returned, and entered again into converſation with the Raja, who was on the after part of the quarter deck, but what was ſaid I did not underſtand: however, I joined them, and again recommended prudence and moderation to the maſter of the ſhip, and deſired he would recollect,

recollect, that we were not prepared for ſuch violent meaſures as he ſeemed inconſiderately diſpoſed to; that as there were a few ſtand of arms in the ſhip, and a few pair of piſtols among the officers, they ſhould have been upon deck, and people ſtationed with ammunition for them; inſtead of which, we had not one armed man upon deck, nor a ſingle neceſſary for uſing the carriage guns; all which reſted with him, ſuch articles being in his care and cuſtody as maſter, for his owners: notwithſtanding this, the violence and perverſeneſs of his temper was ſuch as to diſpoſe him (probably becauſe he was adviſed againſt it,) to create a diſagreement between thoſe people who were all armed, and our people who were defenceleſs. Some of theſe iſlanders paid much attention to the nature and extent of our force, and ſome of them ſhrewdly obſerved, that the great guns were very good at a diſtance, but of no uſe when boats got alongſide of the ſhip; if they had any fear of us, it proceeded from our numbers, which amounted now to one hundred and twenty, and when all upon deck in this ſmall veſſel, they appeared ſtill more numerous. During the converſation between

the Raja and maſter of the ſhip, our people were employed in hoiſting the long boat in, at which the Raja ſeemed very much agitated, and at this very juncture, the maſter having ordered ſome cutlaſſes upon deck, of which he had but very few in the ſhip, they were imprudently laid down on the quarter deck, in the preſence of the Raja and his attendants; this conduct confirmed me in the opinion I already entertained, that he had made uſe of ſome threats which made ſuch preparation neceſſary: be that as it might, the Raja was alarmed for his liberty; his people took the alarm alſo, and called their companions from their boats, who boarded us with drawn daggers: an old man, about ſeventy years of age, who ſtood near the Raja and held him by his ſleeve, drew his dagger, and in great rage endeavoured to reach and ſtab the maſter of the ſhip, but was held back by the Raja; on this, the maſter ſnatched up a hanger to defend himſelf, and with great vehemence called out for ſmall arms. I was cloſe to him at the time, and however much I diſapproved of his general conduct, (which was certainly, in our unguarded ſituation, deſtitute of thought, common ſenſe, or diſcretion, and

was

was the effect of one of the moſt perverſe and diabolical tempers I ever met with,) I judged it neceſſary to draw my ſword and defend him: he continued to call for ſmall arms with much agitation, which ſhould have been previouſly prepared. A number of my ſailors being on the fore part of the deck, trading with the natives, (a conſiderable number of whom were on board, but who all drew their creſſes upon the alarm given by their countrymen) armed themſelves with handſpikes, billets of wood, or whatever lay in their way, while the petty officers of the Sirius got up the ſmall arms, and kept up a ſmart fire on the natives, who were in a ſhort time driven overboard: ſome into their boats, and others were obliged to take to the water; the Raja, during the ſcuffle, tumbled himſelf from the gunwall into his boat, accompanied by his faithful attendants, who certainly did themſelves much honour by their attention to his ſafety. If I had been prepared with my loaded piſtols, as I was upon the Raja's firſt viſit, I ſhould certainly have ſhot the old man before-mentioned, although I am ſure, that upon a little ſerious reflection, and conſideration of the motives of his conduct, I

ſhould have exceedingly regretted having done ſo: he certainly in ſome reſpect occaſioned the diſturbance, (although it originated with the maſter of the ſhip) but it was in conſequence of an indignity offered to the perſon of his ſovereign in his preſence: we ſhould, therefore, be diſpoſed more to commend than condemn his conduct; the inſult was too much for a loyal and affectionate ſubject to bear; he therefore preferred certain death in his defence, to that of living to ſee him ſo degraded.

As ſoon as the Raja and his people were in their boat, they cut the rope which held them, and pulled from the ſhip with the utmoſt precipitation; many were killed in their boats, which (now that this affair had arrived at ſuch length) became really neceſſary, to prevent their rallying and reboarding the ſhip; for after they got into their boats, many lances were thrown into the ſhip, which occaſioned the fire of muſquetry to be kept up ſome time longer than it would have been. I ſaw the Raja pulling at an oar himſelf, and did every thing in my power to prevent his being ſhot: for as every perſon knew him by his dreſs, it was probable he might be particularly

larly marked; I fear much he was wounded, perhaps mortally, notwithſtanding my endeavours to ſave him, as he dropt his oar ſeveral times: during the ſhort time which I had been in his company, I was much pleaſed with him; there was a certain graceful eaſe and affability in his manner, which was highly prepoſſeſſing, and a degree of dignity, which beſpoke him of ſuperior rank: he appeared to be about forty-three or four years of age. In this unlucky rencontre, we were ſo fortunate as not to have a man wounded, which was rather extraordinary, and I believe muſt have been owing to the panic occaſioned by ſo ſudden and unexpected an alarm.

Our boat returned from the ſhore juſt at the concluſion of this unlucky ſcuffle; which common prudence, or a diſpoſition to benefit by the advice that had been offered, might have prevented; for whatever may be the natural diſpoſition of the inhabitants of theſe iſlands, they had ſhewn nothing either unfriendly or ſuſpicious to us; at the ſame time, to place implicit confidence in the friendly diſpoſition of ſuch people, I think, would be highly imprudent. A ſhip calling here for water ſhould be ever on her guard,

a precaution which was not in any one reſpect taken by the maſter of the ſhip, except upon my propoſing, on the Raja's firſt viſit, to have ten of my men placed with ſmall arms upon the top of the round houſe abaft, from which ſituation they could command the whole deck: this propoſal he agreed to, which was more than I expected; for it was no uncommon thing with him to reject any plan, however neceſſary, which his duty ſhould have ſuggeſted, without the aſſiſtance of other opinions.

Theſe obſervations I cannot help making; for they naturally ariſe from the diſtreſſing ſituation in which I found myſelf and officers who were placed under the direction of this moſt ignorant and diſagreeable man. If he had felt himſelf qualified to have navigated a ſhip in the ſeas we had to paſs through, his conduct would in all probability have been more unſufferable, if poſſible, than it was; but our aſſiſtance was abſolutely neceſſary, otherwiſe I believe his veſſel had never reached Batavia.

At eight o'clock in the evening we weighed from the road and put to ſea. This unlucky affair prevented our being able to complete

our

our water, or cut any wood; however, we had filled as much as would prevent our being diſtreſſed for ſome time, and the ſailors had received many refreſhments, of which they were much in need. Hummock Iſland, on which the Raja reſides, is exceedingly fertile, and ſeemed to produce moſt of the tropical fruit; we found here rice, ſugar cane (exceedingly fine and large), pine apple, mango, ſour oranges, limes, jack, plantain, cocoa-nut, ſago, ſweet potatoes, tobacco, Indian corn, and a ſmall kind of pea: dogs, goats, fowls (very fine), parrots, and many other more uſeful articles; but I judge that their principal article of trade with the Dutch is bees-wax, of which they appear to have a conſiderable quantity, and of courſe much honey.

The articles, which ſeemed of moſt value here in exchange for ſtock, were light cloathing of white or printed linens, or cottons, ſuch as looſe gowns or jackets, coloured handkerchiefs, claſp knives, razors, and bar iron; metal buttons had for ſome time a good run, which a ſtranger on board here would ſoon have perceived, as there was ſcarcely a coat or jacket to be ſeen upon deck with a button on it.

it. The natives on theſe iſlands are the ſame ſort of people, and ſpeak the ſame language, as the people on Mindanao; they have a great great deal of the Maylay both in appearance and diſpoſition; they are nearly the ſame ſize, make and colour, and have many of their features; they wore in general jackets and trowſers, but the lower orders had ſeldom any thing but a wrapper round the waiſt; they commonly wore a handkerchief, or other piece of linen round the head, in the manner of a turban. In the ſaſh or wrapper, which all wear round the waiſt, they had their creſs or dagger ſtuck, the ſcabbard of which was a caſe of wood. Many of theſe natives were troubled with a diſeaſe much reſembling the leproſy; their ſkins were covered with a dry ſcurf, like the ſcales of a fiſh, which had a very diſagreeable appearance.

Their canoes were of various ſizes; the bottom is hollowed out of the trunk of a tree, and they were generally raiſed with an upper work of ſplit bamboo, which was ſet very cloſe and light; they had an outrigger on each ſide to balance them; they had alſo a larger boat on which they mounted three ſmall pieces of cannon, of braſs; theſe pieces,

I was

I was told, were of their own manufactory, which I could readily believe, as they were of a very different make to any I had ever ſeen; they were very long, and of narrow bore, and were mounted with a ſwivel, upon poſts, placed one at each end, and one in the center of the boat; they had a long wooden tail fixed to them, by which they turn about and point them. Theſe boats will contain and conceal a great number of men; they were commonly covered with an awning of ſplit bamboo, raiſed ſome diſtance above the gunwale, like the ridge of a houſe. Their maſt was compoſed of three bamboos, two of which ſtood as a pair of ſheers, and required no ſhrouds; the third ſtood forward, and anſwered the purpoſe of a ſtay; and upon this maſt they ſet a ſquare ſail.

After leaving this iſland, nothing particular occurred until our arrival in Batavia Road, where we anchored on the 27th of September, after a paſſage from Port Jackſon of twenty-ſix weeks.

CHAPTER VIII.

Captain Hunter waits on the Governor at Batavia.—Applies for a paſſage to England.—Purchaſes the Waakſamheyd for that purpoſe.—Leaves Batavia.—Arrives at the Cape of Good Hope.—Leaves that place, and anchors at Saint Helena.—Departs from Saint Helena.—Arrives at Portſmouth.—Tables of Latitudes, &c.—Captain Hunter's letter to the Lords of the Admiralty.

THE maſter of the ſhip went immediately on ſhore, to inform his owner (the Shebander) of his arrival: that gentleman wrote me a note the ſame night, begging to ſee me the next morning as early as poſſible, that he might introduce me to the governor. I landed the next morning, and went with the Shebander (who ſpoke Engliſh) to the governor, who lived about three miles out of town. I had previouſly told the Shebander, in writing, what my buſineſs was, which he thought neceſſary for the enabling him the better to interpret between us. I informed the governor, that Governor Phillip had

had found it neceſſary, for the forwarding of his Majeſty's ſervice, to employ the veſſel in which I was embarked to convey to that port the officers and company of his Majeſty's loſt ſhip the Sirius, with a view, that after we had procured the neceſſary proviſions and refreſhments, we ſhould be permitted to proceed in the ſame veſſel to England: I therefore deſired permiſſion to have her refitted, and to proceed with all poſſible expedition. The governor, in anſwer to my requeſt, informed me, that he could not conſent to any veſſel belonging to the company being employed as a tranſport, and that it was contrary to the eſtabliſhed regulations of the company to permit that veſſel, as Dutch property, to proceed from thence to Europe. I deſired that he would take the trouble to conſider the nature of my application; and I begged he might underſtand, that I was not ſoliciting a favour to myſelf, as an individual, but that I was an officer in the king's ſervice, and that although I was not at that port in the command of one of his Majeſty's ſhips, that I nevertheleſs was in actual ſervice, and had at that time a ſhip's company, and their proper officers, under my command; that he would be pleaſed, therefore,

therefore, to underſtand me correctly, that it was for his Majeſty's ſervice I was then making the application he had heard; and I hoped, and belived, that himſelf and the council would find no difficulty or inconvenience to the company's concerns, in deviating a little from their eſtabliſhed rules for the accommodation of his Britannick Majeſty's ſervice. To this he only replied, he could do nothing of himſelf, and that my application muſt be made to the council; to which, I informed him, I had no ſort of objection.

The Shebander, therefore, wrote an application from me in the Dutch language, founded on the letter which I had written to him on that ſubject; to which he added one paragraph that, he ſaid, would very much facilitate the buſineſs, and prevent delay; this was, after having deſired permiſſion to let the veſſel proceed to Europe, "That if "it were impoſſible, conſiſtent with the "eſtabliſhed rules of the company, to grant "ſuch a requeſt, that they would be pleaſed "to give permiſſion for my purchaſing the "veſſel, if I could ſettle the buſineſs with "the proprietor." I waited on the governor and council in perſon, and received my anſwer

ſwer from the governor, which was, that the council had complied with my requeſt, and would permit me to purchaſe the veſſel; a buſineſs which the proprietor and I had previouſly ſettled. This gentleman, whoſe name was Engelhard, acted with much liberality in the equipment of his ſhip, although thoſe whom he employed on that buſineſs did not act with the ſame good intention: he was, upon every occaſion, civil and attentive.

We left Batavia on the 22d of October, and the 17th of December anchored in Table-Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope: but it blew ſo ſtrong from the ſouth-eaſt that we were not able to fetch the upper anchorage: it continued to blow from the ſame quarter for ſeveral days, and on the 20th, it blew ſo violent a gale, that the two bower anchors would not hold the ſhip: finding in the evening that the gale did not in the ſmalleſt degree abate, and that if I continued to truſt any longer to anchors, which it was plain were too light for the ſhip, we ſhould run a riſk of being drove upon the reef off Robbin's Iſland in the night, for every heavy guſt ſet the ſhip a-drift, we cut both the cables before dark, and had juſt day-light enough to

run to ſea under the foreſail. When we got a few leagues to ſea we found the weather quite moderate, and made ſail, with the hope of being able to recover the bay again. On the 22d, in the evening, we fetched cloſe round Green Point, and hoiſted the ſignal of diſtreſs, having but one ſmall anchor left: his Majeſty's ſhip Providence, the Aſſiſtant armed tender, and Pitt tranſport, being in the bay, repeated our ſignal with many guns, and ſent all their boats; ſeveral Engliſh whalers and ſome Americans alſo ſent their boats with anchors and hauſers, and we were very ſoon got into ſafety.

I was much obliged to Captain Bligh, as well as to the commanders of all the other ſhips for their exertions, without which we muſt again have been driven to ſea. The ſame night we received anchors and cables from the ſhore, and ſecured the ſhip. Having completed our proviſions for ſixteen weeks, we ſailed from the Cape of Good Hope, on the 19th of January, 1792.

On the 4th of February, at five in the afternoon, we ſaw the iſland of Saint Helena, and at noon we anchored off James's Valley: I ſent an officer on ſhore to wait on the governor,

governor, who wrote me a very polite note, expreſſing his concern for the misfortune I had met with, and offering every refreſhment the iſland could afford to my ſeamen. On the 5th, I landed, and was received by the governor under the uſual ſalute given to captains of his Majeſty's ſhips (eleven guns). On the 13th, we left the iſland, having received freſh beef for our ſhip's company during our ſtay there, and having completed our water. I ſhould very ill deſerve the civilities I received here, if I were not to take this opportunity of expreſſing my obligations to Lieutenant Colonel Brooke, the governor of this iſland, and to every individual of his family, for their great politeneſs and very friendly attention to myſelf and officers whilſt we remained at this iſland. On the 22d of April we arrived at Portſmouth.

Table of the LATITUDES and LONGITUDES of Places ſeen on a VOYAGE from PORT JACKSON, in NEW SOUTH WALES, to the CAPE OF GOOD HOPE by the Northern Route.

N. B. The Longitudes in this Table are all deduced from Obſervations of Moons Diſtances from the Sun or Stars.

	Latitude South.	Long. from Merid. of Greenw. Eaſt.
	° ′ ″	° ′ ″
Port Jackſon by a mean of upward of 300 lunar diſtances	33 50 08	151 25 25
Botany Bay entrance, deduced from the above obſervations	34 00 00	151 22 30
Broken Bay South Head, ditto	33 34 00	151 27 00
Lord Howe's Iſland Southernmoſt Hill -	31 35 00	159 10 00
Norfolk Iſland (Mount Pitt)	29 02 00	168 05 00
Reef from the S. E. point of New Caledonia, called by Captain Cook, Queen Charlotte's Foreland - -	23 00 00	167 18 00
Stewart's Iſlands (center)	8 26 00	163 18 00
Bradley's Shoals -	6 52 00	161 06 00
Lord Howe's Group (ſouth ſide)	5 30 00	159 25 00
Five iſlands and two large rocks, ſuppoſed to have been Carteret's 9 iſlands (ſouth end)	4 53 00	155 20 00
Appearance of a ſtraight through very high land to the weſtward,		

ſuppoſed

	Latitude South.	Long. from Merid. of Greenw. East.
	° ′ ″	° ′ ″
ſuppoſed to have been Short-land's or Bougainville's paſſage*	5 25 00	154 30 00
Sir Charles Hardy's Iſland	4 41 00	154 20 00
Lord Anſon's Iſland -	5 08 00	154 31 00
Cape St. George New Ireland	4 52 00	153 13 00
Port Hunter, on the Duke of York's Iſland, ſituated in the narroweſt part of the paſſage between New Britain and New Ireland, and which appears to be named by miſtake in Captain Carteret's Chart, Iſle of Man - -	4 07 30	152 42 00
S. W. point of Sandwich Iſland	2 58 00	150 27 00
Portland Iſlands. Center of the Group - -	2 38 00	149 08 00
Part of the Admiralty Iſlands from	2 19 00	147 52 00
- - - to	1 59 00	146 30 00
Two iſlands very diſtant, judged to be in - -	00 55 00	146 09 00
A ſingle iſland, ſmall but pretty high - -	1 36 00	145 35 00
Phillip Iſlands, eaſternmoſt of the	North.	
two - -	8 06 00	140 03 00
Three iſlands, probably part of the New Carolines	9 33 00	137 30 00
N. B. There is a reef extends to the northward from the above iſlands 9 or 10 leagues. We		

* I have ſince ſeen Lieutenant Shortland's Journal, from which I obſerve that his paſſage is farther to the ſouth eaſtward.

	Latitude North.	Long. from Merid. of Greenw. East.
croſſed it in 15 fathoms, and ſaw the rocks under the ſhip.		
North end of the Iſland St. John off the eaſt coaſt of Mindanao	9 30 00	126 32 00
Iſland of Palmas -	5 33 00	127 00 00
Hummock Iſland, N. E. part (off South Coaſt Mindanao)	5 27 00	125 12 00
Poolo Sanguy, North end	3 44 00	125 11 00
N. W. part of Celebes -	1 22 00	121 00 00
Projecting point on the Iſland of Borneo -	1 02 00	119 00 00
Small iſland on the Coaſt of Celebes -	South. 00 03 00	119 54 00
Shoals, called by the Dutch, Triangles - -	2 58 00	117 53 00
A ſmall ſand bank dry, and ſhoal ſpit to ſouthward	3 37 00	117 54 00
Two Brothers off S. E. point of Borneo - -	3 41 00	117 00 00
South part of Borneo -	4 15 00	115 16 00
A long reef of rocks over which we paſſed, and ſaw the ground in 10 fathoms. No land in ſight - -	4 35 00	117 19 00
An iſland ſuppoſed to be Poolo Laut - -	4 56 00	115 40 00
An iſland ſuppoſed to be Solombo	5 42 00	114 24 00
Caraman Java South ſide	5 21 00	110 33 00
Iſlands called the Boomkins South ſide - -	5 56 00	108 21 00
Keelings or Cocos Iſlands South ſide - -	12 06 00	98 03 00

The LORDS of the ADMIRALTY, from a zealous wiſh to promote the nautical intereſts of Great-Britain, were pleaſed to permit the publication of the following letter from CAPTAIN HUNTER; which gives his opinion on the beſt courſe from NEW SOUTH WALES to EUROPE; and which cloſes the inſtructive communications of that able navigator.

To the RIGHT HONOURABLE the LORDS COMMISSIONERS of the ADMIRALTY.

My Lords,

AS the ſettlement, which is now eſtabliſhed on the coaſt of New South Wales, will no doubt occaſion a frequent intercourſe between the Mother Country and that part of the world, I conceive it to be a duty in thoſe, who, from their own experience and obſervation, may be qualified to give any information in their power, relative to the navigation to and from that diſtant country: it is with this hope, that I preſume to trouble

that a paſſage may be made that way with as much eaſe and expedition as by any other route. I confeſs that I differ from theſe opinions: I admit that the paſſage may be made; but I think, whenever it is tried, that it will be found tedious, and fatiguing to the ſhip's company. The ſhip which purſues that route ſhould be ſtrong and well found, and her crew healthy and capable of bearing much blowing, and ſome cold weather. It is not from a ſingle voyage that we are to judge of the eligibility of this paſſage; it will happen in ſome ſeaſons that the wind may be more favourable for making that paſſage than in others; but it is on the general prevalence of weſterly winds here, and the heavy ſea which is conſtantly rolling from the weſtward, that I conceive this route may be tedious and fatiguing, and on which account I give the preference to the ſouthern route by Cape Horn. This paſſage has been frequently tried, and never yet failed of being ſafe and expeditious; the other never having yet been tried, leaves in my mind ſome doubt of its certainty and expedition, and a ſtrong ſuſpicion, that whenever it is, it may be found twice out of three times, attended with the difficulties

difficulties I have hinted at; but if from repeated experience it ſhould be found to be as practicable, expeditious, and certain, as ſome imagine, it will no doubt be preferable to all the others, as being a ſhorter diſtance.

This paſſage will of courſe be attempted only in the Summer months: for admitting a ſhip to have gained ſo much to the weſtward, as to enable her to clear the weſt coaſt of New Holland, and to ſtretch to the northward, until ſhe falls into the ſouth-eaſt trade wind, ſhe will carry this trade in the Summer time probably quite home to the Cape; but in the Winter, north-weſt winds prevail in the neighbourhood of that coaſt, which would exceedingly retard her arrival there.

The paſſage ſouthward by Cape Horn, I have ſailed, and as a proof of the prevalence of weſterly winds in thoſe high latitudes, I made my voyage to the Cape of Good Hope, in ninety-one days, from Port Jackſon, although I was ſo unlucky as to be detained beating off Cape Horn for ſeventeen days, with a north-eaſt wind; which I believe is not very common there. This is rather a long voyage to be performed in that time, and yet I think it will be done twice in three

times

times in leſs, although a diſtance of about 3300 leagues.

The northern paſſage, can only be attempted during the Winter ſeaſon, in the ſouthern hemiſphere, on account of the periodical trade winds in the Indian ſeas, and undertaken in ſuch time as to enſure their reaching Batavia, before the ſetting in of the weſterly winds there, which is generally in the middle or end of October. The dangers, currents, calms, and other delays to which we are liable in theſe little known ſeas, and of which we had much experience in the Waakſamheid tranſport, is the ſubject of the preceding narrative, which was written particularly for the information of your lordſhips, and principally with a view of ſhewing the very great uncertainty of an expeditious voyage to Europe by that paſſage. I ſailed from Port Jackſon in March, and I can take upon me, without, I hope, being ſuppoſed to have preſumed too much on my own judgment and experience to aſſert, that a ſhip leaving that port in the end of September, or beginning of October, taking her route by Cape Horn, would have reached England as ſoon as I have. The time I ſtopped at ſuch

places

places as I was obliged to touch at, will appear in the narrative.

If ever government ſhould find it neceſſary to ſend ſhips to that country, which may be intended to return immediately from thence to England, I beg leave to ſuggeſt to your lordſhips, that the particular ſeaſons in the ſouthern hemiſphere ſhould be conſidered, in order to prevent thoſe delays in the return of the ſhips which muſt inevitably attend their ſailing at an unfavourable time.

If ſuch ſhips leave England in February, or earlier, if found more convenient, they ſhould refreſh at Rio de Janeiro in preference to the Cape of Good Hope; as by the time they could arrive at the Cape, the north-weſt winds will be ſetting in there, which will oblige them to go into the Falſe-bay; this will conſiderably encreaſe their expences, and probably occaſion ſome delay: ſail immediately from Rio Janeiro for the coaſt of New South Wales, where, if they are not uncommonly unfortunate, they will arrive early in September; this is giving them good time.

They will then have time to clear, ballaſt, and to refreſh their people for ſix weeks or two months, and return by Cape Horn; or,

if

if the weſtern paſſage be found preferable, the ſeaſon will be equally favourable for it. If they ſhould take their route by Cape Horn, as they will no doubt require to refreſh ſomewhere in their voyage home, they may either ſtop at Santa Catherina or Rio Janeiro, on the Brazil coaſt, or go to the Cape; in this caſe I would recommend the Cape, as more convenient, in more reſpects than one. If they are ſickly, there they may get a ſupply of men, which it is well known they cannot at either of the other places; and in ſailing from the Cape homeward they will have the advantage of being to windward; however, if as late as April, they would probably prefer Brazil. If water only were wanted, that could be had at Falkland's Iſlands.

In taking the liberty to offer theſe hints, I mean only, that in order to prevent any loſs of time, upon ſuch a ſervice, the ſhips may be diſpatched from England in ſuch time as to inſure their having the Summer months to return either by Cape Horn, or the weſtern route, as may be directed.

The ſhips upon this ſervice will no doubt be under the inconvenience of coming upon the coaſt of New South Wales in ſome of the

the Winter months; we have ſome bad weather on that coaſt in the Winter, and ſome ſmart gales of wind; the eaſterly gales always bring thick or hazy weather: I would recommend the not making too free with the coaſt, until they be near the parallel of their port. In ſteering in for Port Jackſon, if they ſhould fall to leeward, either with a northerly or ſoutherly wind, they can avail themſelves of either Botany-bay or Broken-bay, Port Jackſon being the center harbour.

In the ſketches which will accompany the narrative of my laſt paſſage, I beg leave to inform your lordſhips, that the bearings and and relative ſituations of the different lands which we fell in with, were determined by interſections taken from the ſhip by Lieutenants William Bradley and Henry Waterhouſe, who paid particular and conſtant attention to thoſe very neceſſary obſervations; and that the ſituations of the lands in general were determined by obſervations for the longitude as well as latitude, which were made by myſelf and the above officers.

I have now only to requeſt that your lordſhips will do me the honour to believe, that in the liberty I have taken, I am prompted wholly

wholly by a ſenſe of duty, and that I am, with the utmoſt reſpect.

My Lords,

Your Lordſhips moſt obedient

and devoted humble ſervant,

JOHN HUNTER.

June, 1792.

LIEUTENANT *KING*'s JOURNAL.

THE public owe an obligation, and the publiſher a kindneſs, to Sir Joſeph Banks and Mr. Stephens, of the Admiralty, to whoſe charge Lieutenant King had committed his journal, for liberally allowing the free uſe of this intelligent manuſcript, in order to the publication of ſuch parts of it as might be ſupplementary in its notices to the foregoing narrative of Captain Hunter.

The journal of Lieutenant King, like the narrative of Captain Hunter, begins with the *plan* of a ſettlement on the coaſt of New South

South Wales, for the preſent baniſhment of convicts, in the hope of future benefit to the nation; and with the outfit of the ſhips which had been appointed for this uncommon expedition. Like Captain Hunter, under whom he ſailed in the Sirius, he conducts their little fleet from England to the Canaries; from theſe iſlands to the Brazils; from Rio de Janeiro to the Cape of Good Hope; recording ſuch profeſſional notices, and making ſuch uſeful remarks, as occurred on a voyage, which being now perfectly known, could afford in the recital little diverſity, and could furniſh in the publication neither information nor amuſement. Of the Sirius, which was never more to return to *the Thames*, he tells the following anecdote: "She was "built in *the river* for an eaſt country ſhip; "and in loading her, ſhe took fire and was "burnt down to her wales. The govern- "ment wanting a roomy veſſel to carry ſtores "abroad, in 1781, purchaſed her bottom, "which was rebuilt with ſuch ſtuff as, dur- "ing the war, could be found. She went "two voyages as the Berwick ſtore-ſhip; "and without any repairs ſhe was reported, "when the preſent expedition was thought "of

" of, as fit for the voyage to New Holland, " when ſhe was named *The Sirius.*" Experience, however, evinced, that ſhe was altogether adequate to the ſervice for which ſhe was deſtined; and carried her crew ſafe through one of the moſt tremendous gales, on a lee ſhore, that the oldeſt ſeaman remembered.

Lieutenant King deſcribes the Cape of Good Hope, of which ſo many accounts have been given. Here was it determined, that with Governor Phillip and other officers, he was to change his ſhip from the Sirius to the Supply, an armed tender of one hundred and ſeventy tons: but this meaſure was not executed till the fleet had ſailed 352 miles from the Cape of Good Hope, when they yet had 5582 miles of an ocean to traverſe, before they could expect to ſee the ſouth cape of New Holland, the object of their hopes. Soon after they had parted from their aſſociates in the voyage, they were alarmed in the night with the cry of *rocks under the lee bow:* but having put the helm a-lee, they ſoon perceived, that the Supply had paſſed over two enormous whales, which gave her a ſhock that was felt by all. Without any other

other accident, though they had heavy gales and a boiſterous ſea, they anchored at Botany-Bay on the 19th of January, 1788, after a voyage of thirty-ſeven weeks and a day, ſince their departure from England. On the fifth day after their arrival, two ſtrange ſhips were ſeen ſtanding into the bay, which proved to be the La Bouſſole and L'Aſtrolabe, under the command of Monſieur De la Peyrouſe, and which have been long wiſhfully looked for by all the good and wiſe of Europe.

CHAPTER IX.

Lieutenant King viſits Monſieur De la Peyrouſe at Botany-Bay.—Polite reception there.—An account of his adventures.—Lieutenant King returns to Port Jackſon.—Sent by Governor Phillip to form a ſettlement on Norfolk Iſland.—Leaves Port-Jackſon.—An iſland diſcovered.—Arrival at Norfolk-Iſland.—Difficulty in finding a landing-place.—Lands the convicts, proviſions, and ſtores.—Ground cleared, and tents fixed.—Vege-

tables and various ſorts of grain ſown.— General orders for the regulation of the ſettlement.

ON the 1ſt of February, 1788, at day-light in the morning, Lieutenant Dawes of the marines, and myſelf, left Sydney Cove in a cutter, in order to proceed to Botany-Bay, and viſit Monſieur De la Peyrouſe, on the part of Governor Phillip, and to offer him any aſſiſtance he might ſtand in need of. We arrived on board the Buſſole at ten o'clock in the morning, and were received with the greateſt attention and politeneſs by Monſieur Peyrouſe, and the few officers he had. After delivering my meſſage to him, he returned his thanks to Governor Phillip, and made us ſimilar offers to thoſe he had received, adding at the ſame time, that he ſhould be in France within the ſpace of fifteen months, and as he had ſtores, &c. ſufficient to ſerve him for three years, he ſhould be happy to ſend Governor Phillip any thing that he might want. Monſieur Peyrouſe informed me, that a number of the convicts had been to him, and wanted to enter on board his ſhips, but that he had diſmiſſed them with threats, and had given

given them a day's proviſions to carry them back to the ſettlement.

The wind coming on to blow freſh from the northward, I accepted Monſieur Peyrouſe's invitation to paſs the day with him, and to return to Port Jackſon the next morning.

In the courſe of our converſation, I learned that he had touched at, and been off, the following places, viz. Madeira, Teneriffe, and Santa Catherina: he had run down the coaſts of Chili and California, on the laſt of which he had loſt boats, officers, and men, by the ſurf. He had been at Kamſchatka, where he replaced the wooden inſcription that had been erected to the memory of Captain Clerke, (which was nearly defaced) with a copper one: for this attention I thanked him. From Kamſchatka, he went to Macao; from thence to the Phillippines, the Sandwich Iſlands, Iſles des Navigateurs, Friendly Iſlands, and Norfolk Iſland, from whence he came to Botany-Bay. At the Iſland Macuna, (one of the Iſles des Navigateurs) in latitude 14° 19′ ſouth, longitude 173° 00′ 20″ eaſt of Paris, he had been ſo very unfortunate as to loſe Monſieur De Langle, captain of the

L'Aſtrolabe, together with eight officers, four ſailors, and one boy; all of whom were killed by the natives, beſides a number who were wounded. This melancholy affair happened in the following manner: The two ſhips had been at the iſland juſt mentioned ſome days, and were on very good terms with the natives, who had furniſhed them with every article of ſtock in the greateſt profuſion, for barter: Monſieur De la Peyrouſe, however, had found it very neceſſary to be on his guard againſt a treacherous diſpoſition which he diſcovered in them. When every thing was ready for their departure, and the ſhips were under weigh, De Langle requeſted M. Peyrouſe to permit him to get another turn of water; this M. Peyrouſe conſented to, but with as much reluctance as De Langle ſeemed ſolicitous to obtain his requeſt: as the long-boats were not hoiſted in, they were ſent on this ſervice, with two other boats to attend them, under the direction of the unfortunate De Langle. At this time the ſhips were lying to, and a ſtrong current ſet them round a point out of ſight of the place where the boats were to land. When the boats landed, the men were, as uſual, ſurrounded by

by the inhabitants, who did not immediately diſcover any hoſtile intention: unfortunately, the ſailors in the long-boats had ſuffered them to take the ground, and whilſt they were endeavouring to get them afloat again, the natives were very troubleſome, and preſſed cloſe in upon the ſailors; on this, De Langle ordered the men in the rowing-boats to be ready to fire on the natives, but not to do it until he ordered them. Some altercation happening at this juncture, in conſequence of their preſſing ſo cloſe upon the French, probably occaſioned a blow with a club from one of the natives, which was inſtantly taken as a ſignal by the reſt, and the maſſacre began. The natives were armed with ſhort heavy clubs, by which means they rendered the fire-arms uſeleſs. Orders were given to fire the ſwivels, &c. in the rowing-boats, but it was too late, although the natives fled the moment they were fired, dragging the dead bodies after them. It was ſuppoſed that thirty of the natives were killed in this unfortunate affray. Thoſe belonging to the ſhips, who eſcaped the maſſacre, ſwam to the rowing-boats, and were carried on board the ſhips: many of them had received violent

contuſions on the head, as all the blows were aimed at that part. De la Peyrouſe thought proper to quit the iſland immediately, after endeavouring to regain his long-boats, which he found the natives had deſtroyed: he deſcribes the inhabitants of theſe iſlands as a very ſtrong and handſome race of men; ſcarcely one was to be ſeen amongſt them leſs than ſix feet high, and well proportioned; the women are delicately beautiful; their canoes, houſes, &c. are well conſtructed, and they are much more advanced in internal policy and order than any of the iſlands in the Pacific Ocean.

After dinner I attended M. Peyrouſe and his officers on ſhore, where I found him quite eſtabliſhed; he had thrown round his tents a ſtockade, which was guarded by two ſmall guns, and in which they were ſetting up two long-boats, which he had in frame. An obſervatory tent was alſo fixed on ſhore, in which were an aſtronomical clock, a quadrant, and other inſtruments under the care of Monſieur D'Agelet, Aſtronomer, and a member of the Academy of Sciences at Paris: he, as well as Monſieur De la Peyrouſe, informed me, that at every place they had touched

touched at, and been near, they had found all the nautical and aſtronomical remarks of Captain Cook to be very exact and true.

In the evening I returned on board the Bouſſole, and was ſhewn all the drawings they had made during their voyage; and at five o'clock the next morning I ſet out on my return to Port Jackſon, but did not arrive on board the Sirius before ſeven in the evening, having been obliged to row all the way againſt the wind and a great ſwell.

About this time two criminal courts were aſſembled in order to try offenders, and as the proceedings in theſe caſes are, in a great meaſure, new, a ſhort account of them may not be unacceptable.

The judge-advocate iſſues his precept for the three ſenior naval officers and three military officers to aſſemble at the time appointed, dreſſed in their uniforms and their ſide-arms: when they are met, the judge-advocate adminiſters an oath to the members, ſimilar to that which is uſed at military courts-martial; afterwards, one of the members adminiſters the ſame oath to the judge-advocate, who preſides at the court, and the reſt take their ſeats according to their rank. The priſoner is

then aſked, whether he is guilty or not, and, as the general anſwer is, "not guilty," the accuſations againſt him are read, and witneſſes are examined on oath to ſupport or prove the charge; after which the priſoner enters on his defence, and brings evidence to prove his innocence: the court is then cleared, and the members conſider what ſentence to pronounce; if it be death, five out of the ſeven muſt concur in opinion. The governor can reſpite a criminal condemned to die, and the legiſlature has fully empowered him to execute the ſentence of the law, or to temper it with mercy. Actions for debt, for a certain amount, are cognizable by this court, as are all other actions at common law, where they are decided according to the law of England, as nearly as the ſituation will allow.

On the 6th of February, Governor Phillip ſignified his intention of ſending me to Norfolk-Iſland, with a few people, and ſtock to ſettle it, and Lieutenant Ball was ordered to receive on board the Supply the ſtores and proviſions neceſſary for that purpoſe: this buſineſs engaged the whole of my attention until the 15th, when, having received my commiſſion and inſtructions from the gover-

nor,

nor, (and taken the oaths of fidelity and allegiance, &c. &c. and the cuſtomary oath as a juſtice of the peace for Norfolk-Iſland;) by which I was appointed ſuperintendant and commandant of Norfolk-Iſland, I embarked the following perſons, who were appointed to go along with me, viz. Mr. James Cunningham, maſter's mate of the Sirius; Mr. Thomas Jameſon, ſurgeon's firſt mate of the Sirius; Mr. John Altree, aſſiſtant to the ſurgeon; Roger Morly, weaver; William Weſtbrook, and —— Sawyer, ſeamen; Charles Herritage, and John Batchelor, marines; with nine male and ſix female convicts; in all, twenty-three perſons.

We ſailed from Sydney-Cove at ſeven o'clock in the morning, and at eight we got out of the harbour, when we found it blew very freſh, and as we got off the land it came on to blow a perfect hurricane, with a moſt tremendous ſea running, which often broke into the veſſel: the gale kept up with great violence, as did the ſea during the whole day, and I often thought the veſſel in a critical ſituation.

At two o'clock in the morning, the wind moderated, but a heavy ſea was ſtill running.

At

At day-break in the morning of the 18th, land was diſcovered; and, from its appearance, we judged it to be two ſmall rocks or iſlands, not more than ſix leagues diſtant. At eight in the morning, we tacked towards the land, but the wind being light during the whole day, our progreſs was very ſlow. Early the next morning, having neared the land conſiderably, we perceived a pointed rock a-head at ſome diſtance from the iſland; on which we hove to, and ſoundings were tried for with 120 fathoms of line, but we got no bottom. At day-light we made ſail, and perceived that the two iſlands or hills we had ſeen the day before, were two very high rocky mountains, on the ſouth ſide of an iſland. This ſide of the iſland formed a deep bay, in which there appeared to be good ſhelter from the north-eaſt. At noon, we had a very good meridian altitude, by which the latitude was 31° 40′ ſouth, and the center of the iſland bore north 40° weſt, diſtant about ſix miles; conſequently, its latitude is 31° 35′ ſouth, and the longitude 159° eaſt of Greenwich. The form of the iſland is a creſcent, and it is very ſmall in proportion to the two ſtupendous rocky mountains which

riſe

riſe at its ſouthern extremity. One of the rocks riſes perpendicularly from the ſea, and has the appearance of a regular pyramid, when ſeen from the weſtward: we ſailed from it in a direct courſe 22 leagues, and could then ſee it very plainly. Lieutenant Ball, who was certainly the diſcoverer of this iſland, named it Lord Howe's Iſland. At noon on the 20th, we loſt ſight of Ball's pyramid in the haze, after having run 22 leagues from it in the direction of eaſt by ſouth: I think, in clear weather, it may be ſeen at the diſtance of thirty leagues. At day-light on the 29th, we had great numbers of birds round us, and the clouds hanging very thick to the eaſtward, indicated our being near the land; but it was not till eleven o'clock in the forenoon that we made the largeſt of the two ſmall iſlands which lie off the ſouth-weſt end of Norfolk-Iſland. At noon, the body of Norfolk-Iſland was diſtant ſeven or eight leagues. At four in the afternoon, we rounded the northern point of the iſland, which I named Point Howe, in honour of the firſt lord of the admiralty, at the time we left England: we ſoon after hove to, off a caſcade, which is ſituated near the middle of the

of the north ſide of the iſland: the boat was hoiſted out, and lieutenant Ball and myſelf went to examine if it were poſſible to land on a ſtony beach, which is ſituated a little to the eaſtward of the caſcade; but we found ſo great a ſurf rolling on the ſhore, that the loſs of the boat, and perhaps of the ſailors lives, would have been the conſequence of our attempting to land; ſo that at ſun-ſet we returned on board, and the boat was hoiſted in. Early the next morning, lieutenant Ball and myſelf went in a boat to examine whether we could find a landing-place from the ſouthernmoſt, or Point Roſs, to the north-weſt, or Point Howe. From the caſcade to a ſmall bay, which lies on the north-eaſt ſide of the iſland, we found the ſhore lined with ſteep inacceſſible cliffs, againſt which the ſea broke with great violence, and rendered the boat's approach impracticable. The ſmall bay I named Ball-bay, after lieutenant Henry Lidgbird Ball: the bottom of the bay is a ſtony beach, on which the ſurf broke with too much force to riſque the boat. From this bay, we rowed round the ſouth-eaſt point, and opened the two iſlands, the largeſt of which I named Phillip-Iſle, after

Governor

Governor Phillip; and the ſmalleſt, Nepean-Iſle, after Evan Nepean. The point of Norfolk Iſland, oppoſite Nepean-Iſle, I called Point Hunter, after captain John Hunter, of his Majeſty's ſhip the Sirius. Between Point Hunter and Point Roſs, there is a large, though not a deep, bay, with ſeveral fine ſandy beaches; but without the beaches, there runs a reef parallel with the ſhore, which ſeemed to prevent any landing on it. We returned along ſhore, and endeavoured to land on a ſtony beach to the weſtward of the caſcade, but could not: we next rowed to the north-eaſt point of the iſland, off which lies a cluſter of high rocks; I called them Cook's Rocks, in memory of the late Captain James Cook, who diſcovered this iſland, and landed near theſe rocks in 1774: but we found landing impoſſible, on account of the ſurf, which broke every where, though this may not be the caſe in fine weather. In the evening we returned on board, without being able to ſet our feet on ſhore.

At three o'clock in the afternoon of the the next day, a boat was hoiſted out, and after two attempts, I landed with Lieutenant Ball, on the ſide of a large rock, which lies cloſe

cloſe to the ſhore, at the weſt end of a ſmall ſtony beach: it muſt have been on this rock that Captain Cook landed, as there is no other place at this ſide of the iſland, where it is poſſible to attempt a landing at any time, and that is only practicable here, from half ebb to half flood, in very fine weather, and the wind off the iſland. As it was near the evening when we landed, we very ſoon returned on board again, with a quantity of ſorrel that we had gathered. We found this a very improper place to land either people or ſtores, it being impracticable to get them further than the beach, and there was no freſh water near it.

At day-light in the morning of the 3d of March, I left the Supply, and went in her boat along with Mr. Cunningham, to examine the ſouth-weſt ſide of the iſland, which we rowed round, until we opened Phillip and Nepean Iſles off the ſouth point; but it blew too hard, and there was too great a ſea running for us to pull the boat any further, ſo that at two in the afternoon we returned on board.

I landed the next morning abreaſt of the Supply, with the midſhipman and ſurgeon.

After

After aſcending a very ſteep hill, we got to the top of the iſland, which we found to be a plain, but every foot of ground was covered with trees, or the large roots of trees which roſe above the ſurface of the earth; theſe were not the only impediments to our march, as it was impoſſible for us to walk four yards, without encountering an almoſt impenetrable net-work, compoſed of a large kind of ſupple-jack, or vine; which was ſo very ſtrong, as to ſuppreſs the growth of ſeveral trees, by bending them in every direction; and they ſo completely ſtopped our progreſs, that we were obliged to cut our way through them.

We found it impracticable to get into Anſon's bay, although we ſaw down into it; but the hill over it was a perpendicular cliff, with a large kind of iris growing on the ſides of it, which was a providential circumſtance, for, in our endeavour to get into the bay, we were all in the greateſt danger of falling down the cliff; indeed, if the iris had not been ſufficiently ſtrong to have ſupported our weight, we muſt have fallen down a depth of 90 feet. We were too much pleaſed with, and thankful for our eſcape, to attempt a

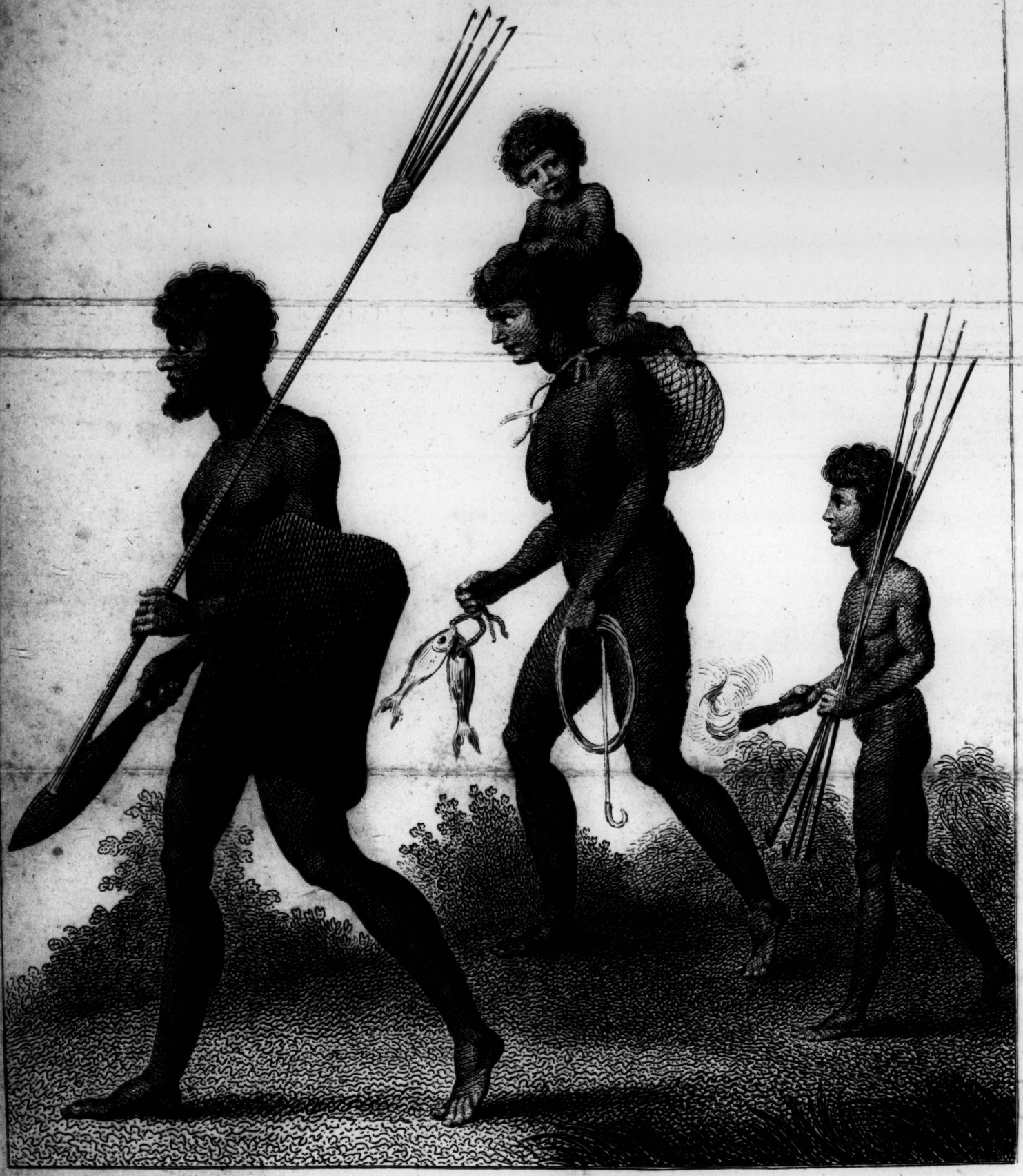
ſecond

ſecond trial, as the whole of this ſide of the iſland had the ſame ſteep appearance.

During this excurſion, we did not ſee a leaf of flax, or any herb whatever; the ground, although a rich and deep ſoil, being quite bare, which is rather extraordinary, as Captain Cook ſays that the flax plant is rather more luxuriant here than at New Zealand. We ſaw pigeons, parrots, parroquets, doves, and a variety of other birds, in great numbers, and ſo very tame, that they might be knocked down with a ſtick. Large pieces of pumice ſtone were ſeen in every part; probably a crater, or the remains of one, may be found at, or near a mountain, which riſes to a conſiderable height in the middle of the iſland, and which I called Mount Pitt, in honour of the chancellor of the exchequer.

As the ſandy bay, on the ſouth-weſt ſide of the iſland, had not been examined to my ſatisfaction, Lieutenant Ball propoſed going round in the brig, and endeavour to land, which there was a great probability of effecting: accordingly, at day-light in the morning of the 5th of March, we weighed, and ran round to the bay, which I had named

Anſon-



From a Sketch by Governor King *Blake Sculp^t*

A FAMILY OF NEW SOUTH WALES

Publish'd by I. Stockdale, Piccadilly. Novr 15 - 1792

Anſon-bay, after the parliamentary repreſentative for Litchfield. We found the ſurf too violent to land there, and I now began to think it would be impoſſible to land on the iſland; as I had nearly made a circuit of it, and had not found a place where I could attempt landing. There yet remained one place unexamined, which was the ſouth ſide of the iſland, in a bay, that appeared to be entirely lined with a reef, on which the ſurf broke with great violence. We worked up for the bay, and at noon, the maſter was ſent to examine if there were any opening through the reef; on his return he informed us, that landing in the bay was very ſafe and practicable, as the reef terminated about two-thirds of the bay over, and round the point of this reef, landing was eaſy and ſafe. On hearing this report, Lieutenant Ball and myſelf went to examine the place, and found it exactly to anſwer the maſter's deſcription. Here I reſolved to fix, and was pleaſed at having found a place where I could make a commencement. I had no doubt but water would be procured, and that at no great diſtance from the ſpot; but as it was very late in the evening, I re-

turned on board the Supply, and ſhe was ſoon after brought to an anchor.

At day-light on the 6th, I left the Supply with two boats, having in them all the perſons belonging to the ſettlement, together with the tents, a part of the proviſions, and ſome of the moſt uſeful tools; all which we landed, and began clearing a ſmall piece of ground to erect the tents on: the colours were hoiſted, and before ſun-ſet, every perſon and article belonging to the ſettlement were on ſhore, and the tents pitched. Before the colours were hauled down, I aſſembled my ſmall colony under them, (Lieutenant Ball and ſome of his officers being preſent,) and drank the healths of his Majeſty, the Queen, the Prince of Wales, and ſucceſs to the ſettlement; and, as we had no other way of teſtifying our loyalty, we gave three cheers on the occaſion. On the 7th, I began to clear a piece of ground for ſowing ſome ſeeds; the ſpot, which I fixed on for that purpoſe, is on the eaſt ſide of an hill which has a tolerable eaſy aſcent, and the ſoil is rich and deep. Soon after landing, we found a very fine rivulet of water, which ran cloſe at the back of the ground where the ſettlement was made.

made. I took the firſt opportunity of examining the iſland around me, and found it almoſt impenetrable from the ſize of the trees, and the entangled ſtate of their roots, which were in general two feet above the ground, and ran along it to a conſiderable diſtance. On the ſpaces of ground unoccupied by theſe roots, there grew a kind of ſupple-jack, which in general was as thick as a man's leg; theſe ſupple-jacks ran up the trees, and as they grew in every direction, they formed an impenetrable kind of network: bending ſome trees to the ground, and then taking root again, they twined round other trees in the ſame manner, until the whole became an impervious foreſt. As I had only twelve men, (one of whom was ſeventy-two years old, and another a boy of fifteen,) excluſive of the mate and ſurgeon, my progreſs for ſome time muſt of courſe be very ſlow. In the forenoon of the 8th, we received the laſt of our baggage, proviſions, and ſtores, and hauled the boat up. Soon afterwards, Lieutenant Ball came on ſhore to aſk if I had any farther occaſion for the Supply, and, as I had not any, he took leave and returned on board; and in the

afternoon ſailed for Port Jackſon. I ſent by him a journal of my proceedings to Governor Phillip.

The 9th of March, being Sunday, every perſon in the ſettlement aſſembled in my tent, where I performed divine ſervice; after which my commiſſion from the Governor, to whom we were ſubordinate, was read, appointing me ſuperintendant and commandant of this iſland; I then aſſured every perſon, that my intention was to forward the King's ſervice to the utmoſt of my power; and (addreſſing myſelf to the convicts) I endeavoured to convince them, that thoſe who were idle or diſhoneſt ſhould not eſcape that puniſhment, which is due to uſeleſs and deſtructive members of ſociety: I alſo informed them what ratio of proviſions would be allowed daily, and I held out every encouragement for them to behave with propriety and induſtry.

In the afternoon I ſaw ſome turtle lying on a ſandy beach at the eaſt end of the bay; two of which we turned and brought to the tents for general uſe; they were iſſued out in lieu of ſalt proviſions. Finding we had turtle on the iſland, I gave ſtrict orders that no perſon whatever ſhould go near the beech

where they were ſeen, in order to prevent them from being frightened, which might occaſion the loſs of this valuable reſource: the two turtle we had caught weighed two hundred weight each. From this time until the 15th, every perſon was employed in clearing away, and turning up the garden ground, which, when finiſhed, was encloſed by a hedge, and ſown with a ſmall quantity of all the different kinds of ſeeds I was furniſhed with. The ſize of the encloſure was eighty-ſeven feet ſquare: the ſoil very rich and deep. This afternoon I turned three more turtles, which were brought to the ſettlement.

Two convicts, whom I had given leave the preceding day to take an excurſion into the interior part of the iſland, returned on the 16th at noon quite naked: they had ſeveral cuts in different parts of their bodies, ſome of which were deep, occaſioned by the entangled ſtate of the woods, and the ſharpneſs of the briars: they had not been an hour from the ſettlement before they loſt ſight of the ſun from the thickneſs of the woods; this cauſed them to wander about till eleven o'clock, when they heard the noiſe of our

church bell, which was a man beating on the head of an empty caſk, and preſently afterwards they returned to the ſettlement.

As my own ſituation, and that of every other perſon was very uncomfortable, owing to the tents being cloſe to the ſea ſhore, on which a heavy ſurf continually beats: I ſet the people to work on the 17th, to clear a piece of ground to the right of the garden, and a little above it; here I intended to move the tents, or to build houſes; and having two ſawyers and a carpenter, I ſet them to work in digging a ſawpit, in order to ſaw pine for building a ſtore-houſe for the proviſions and ſtores, they at preſent being lodged in my tent, which was made of the Sirius's ſprit-ſail.

The ſurgeon, in walking about the iſland, found out the flax-plant, which proved to be what we had hitherto called the iris: not having any deſcription of this plant, I had no idea of its being what Captain Cook calls the flax-plant of New Zealand; the cliffs and ſhore near the ſettlement were covered with it; its root is bulbous, and eight leaves iſſue from it, which are, in general, five or ſix feet in length, and about four inches broad, cloſe to the root: the plant bears a great

great reſemblance to the iris, except that the leaves are much thicker and larger; the flaxy part is the fibres, which extend the whole length of the leaf; towards the root they are very thick and ſtrong, and diminiſh in ſize as they approach the end of the leaf. This plant, in its green ſtate, is of a ſurpriſing ſtrength.

The method of preparing the New Zealand flax not being deſcribed by Captain Cook, I cauſed three bundles of ours to be put in the rivulet to ſoak, intending to try it after the European method of dreſſing flax. The ſawpit being finiſhed on the 18th, a ſmall pine was cut down near it, which meaſured 115 feet in length, and two feet ſix inches diameter at the baſe: a twelve foot length was got on the pit, and the ſawyers began ſawing it into framings and ſcantlings for the ſtore-houſe. By the 19th, the greateſt part of the ſeeds we had procured at the Cape of Good Hope, and ſown in the garden, were out of the ground, and ſeemed likely to do well; but ſcarcely any of the Engliſh ſeeds grew, they, in general, being ſpoiled.

The ſtore-houſe was finiſhed on the 2d of April: its dimenſions were twelve feet ſquare, and nine feet high. All the proviſions and ſtores were immediately brought

from my tent and depoſited in the ſtore-houſe. During the laſt three days the wind blew very ſtrong from the ſouth-weſt, which blighted every plant that was come up and doing very well; I had alſo the mortification to find that the rats were very numerous; they deſtroyed ſome Indian corn which was three inches out of the ground.

As there was every reaſon to ſuppoſe that the ſouth-weſt winds would be frequent during the winter, I began to clear the ground on the north-eaſt ſide of the hill, (which I named Mount George) which, of courſe, would be ſheltered from the ſouth and ſouth-weſt winds. I now found that no vegetables would thrive at this ſeaſon of the year on the ſouth ſide of the mount; I therefore ordered the garden ground to be turned up and ſown with wheat. The ground which we had for ſome time been clearing to fix the tents upon, being now ready for that purpoſe, all the tents were moved to it on the 3d, and ſome of the men began to build huts: the ſawyers were employed in ſawing ſcantling, and other neceſſary timber to build me a houſe. I had much reaſon to fear that the turtle were frightened away,

as

as we had not ſeen any on the beach ſince the 14th of March, although every precaution had been uſed to prevent their being moleſted. This reſource we could not help feeling the want of, as its good effects had already been experienced by every perſon on the iſland; indeed, there was not an individual who had not the ſcurvy on landing, and ſome of the convicts had it very bad; but they were now quite recovered. Another unfortunate circumſtance was, that as yet we had not brought any vegetables to perfection; however, to make ſome amends for this accident, we found a vaſt number of cabbage-trees, the excellence of which are well known: they are a very good ſubſtitute for other vegetables, but one tree produces only a ſingle cabbage.

The wheat, which was ſown in the garden ground on the 2d, was entirely eat up with rats by the 4th; they did not leave a ſingle grain in the ground. As I had no cats, and only one dog, theſe vermin were likely to prove a ſerious nuiſance; however, in order to rid ourſelves of them as much as poſſible, I cauſed all the empty caſks to be converted into traps.

Behind

Behind the hill where the ſettlement was fixed, there was a very large ſwamp, occaſioned by the overflowing of the rivulet: at the head of this ſwamp there is a fine valley, in which a number of plantain or banana trees were found; and a ſmall ſpot being near them which would not coſt ſo much pains or trouble to clear as many other places, I judged this would be a very good place for a garden; eſpecially as the ſurrounding hills entirely ſheltered it from the ſea winds, and, from the appearance of the banana trees, I expected they would thrive very well when cultivated; at preſent, they were in thick cluſters, choaking each other; and being covered with wild vines and aquatic ſhrubs, their growth was conſiderably retarded. Some fruit was found on them, but the birds had deſtroyed it before it was ripe.

The 6th of April, being Sunday, I performed divine ſervice; and as ſome irregularities had taken place, that did not merit corporal puniſhment, being anxious to prevent any ill behaviour, which might render ſuch a ſtep neceſſary, I read the following orders for the preſervation of regularity and decorum.

ORDERS.

ORDERS.

As it is highly neceſſary, for the preſervation of good order, regularity, and cleanlineſs, to eſtabliſh certain rules and regulations, the following are to be obſerved and performed with the ſtricteſt attention.

I. No perſon is to abſent himſelf from public worſhip, which will begin every Sunday morning at eleven o'clock, in the commandant's houſe, when every one will come clean and orderly, and behave themſelves devoutly.

II. The hours of work are as follow: until further orders, to begin work at daylight, and work till half paſt ſeven; at half paſt eight, to work again until half paſt eleven; and then to work again at two until ſun-ſet.

III. In order to encourage the cultivation of gardens, every one will have the Saturdays to clear away and cultivate gardens for themſelves; and thoſe who are induſtrious will be encouraged, but thoſe who miſapply that indulgence will be deprived of it.

IV. On application, at the proper time of the year, ſeeds will be diſtributed to thoſe who

who have cleared away garden ground; and thoſe who raiſe the greateſt quantity of ſeeds and vegetables will be encouraged and rewarded.

V. The women are to ſweep round the houſes or tents every morning, and to cook the victuals for the men; and every perſon is ſtrictly forbid cleaning any fiſh or fowls in or near the houſes, but to go to the ſea-ſide for that purpoſe.

VI. Every perſon is ſtrictly forbid going near Turtle Bay, and thoſe who are found in it, or going there, will be inſtantly and ſeverely puniſhed.

VII. The women are to collect the dirty linen belonging to the men every Friday, and to return each man his proper linen, waſhed and mended, on the Sunday morning.

VIII. No perſon is to cut down or deſtroy any banana tree.

IX. Exchanging or ſelling cloaths by the convicts is ſtrictly forbid. As their cloathing is the property of the crown, they are not to diſpoſe of it. A diſobedience of this order will be deemed a theft, and meet with a ſuitable puniſhment. It is recommended to every one to be careful of their cloathing and

and bedding, as accidents may happen which may prevent a ſpeedy ſupply.

X. Great care is to be taken of all the tools; each man taking his axe or hoe to his tent, or delivering them to the ſtore-keeper, that they may not be injured by the weather.

XI. As the future welfare of every perſon on this iſland depends on their good behaviour, it is recommended to them to perſevere in that willing diſpoſition to work which they have hitherto ſhewn; and above all, to be honeſt and obliging towards each other, which will recommend them to thoſe who may have it in their power, and who have a wiſh and inclination to ſerve them: but the diſhoneſt or idle may not only aſſure themſelves of being totally excluded from any preſent or future indulgences, but alſo that they will be chaſtiſed, either by corporal puniſhment on the iſland, or be ſent to Port Jackſon, to be tried by a criminal court there.

CHAPTER X.

Regular employment of the convicts.—Thefts detected.—The robbers puniſhed.—Peſtered with rats.—Method of deſtroying them.—Live ſtock on the ſettlement.—Trees diſcovered which afford food for hogs.—Some of the ſettlers poiſoned.—Cured with ſweet oil.—A convict puniſhed for uſing ſeditious language.—His Majeſty's birth-day kept.—Flouriſhing ſtate of the gardens.—Arrival of the Supply.—Four perſons drowned.—Proviſions and ſtores received.—Arrival of the Golden Grove tranſport.—Marines and convicts brought in the Golden Grove.—Proviſions and ſtores.

THE ſettlement being now brought to ſome degree of order, I diſtributed the people into regular working parties, in order to facilitate the different operations which I was anxious to get forward as faſt as poſſible. Five men were ſent to clear away ground on the north-eaſt ſide of Mount George; two were employed in clearing a road from the ground where we had pitched the tents, to the

the freſh-water rivulet; two ſawyers were ſawing timber to build me a houſe; two men were employed in building huts; and I ſent Mr. Altree, (the ſurgeon's aſſiſtant) to the valley which has already been mentioned, in order to make a commencement there, but as he had only a boy to aſſiſt him, his progreſs was of courſe very ſlow.

For ſome time, the people were thus invariably employed; but the work was often retarded by colds, which was the only ſickneſs we had as yet experienced: the workmen, indeed, had been often blinded for four or five days together, by the white ſap of a tree, which getting into their eyes, occaſioned a moſt excruciating pain for ſeveral days. The beſt remedy we could apply, was Florence oil; which, dropped into the eye, deſtroyed the acrimony of the ſap. One man was totally blinded with it, for want of making timely application to the ſurgeon. On the 17th of April, I detected John Bachelor, one of the marines, in my tent, ſtealing rum out of a ſmall veſſel, which contained what was drawn off to ſerve the officers and men belonging to the Sirius; and was kept in my tent, as I had not a more ſecure place

to

to put it in. In the afternoon, I aſſembled the ſettlement, and puniſhed the thief with three dozen laſhes; cauſing him to be led by a halter to the place of puniſhment: I alſo ſtopped the deficiency of rum out of his allowance.

Though there was reaſon to hope that this example would deter others from committing crimes of the like nature, yet it had not the deſired effect; for on the 20th, a convict boy was detected ſtealing the ſurgeon's allowance of rum, out of his tent. This boy was only fifteen years old, and was tranſported for ſeven years. I ordered him to be puniſhed with an hundred laſhes, which I hoped would have a good effect.

We now had two formidable enemies to encounter in the rat and grub-worm, both which were very numerous and deſtructive: ſome wheat had been ſown in the garden ground on the 11th, and the next morning there was not a grain of it left, being all eat up by the rats; and the few potatoes and other vegetables, which eſcaped the bad effects of the ſoutherly wind, were all eat up by the grub-worm. I have before obſerved, that on our firſt diſcovering the rats to be

numerous,

numerous, I ordered the empty caſks to be converted into traps, and for ſome time they were very ſucceſsful, thirty or forty rats being caught for ſeveral nights together: theſe were killed, and ſcattered about the garden, to deter the reſt from coming to the place; but they ſoon grew too cunning to be caught in the traps, and too bold to be intimidated by their dead companions. I next cauſed ſome glaſs to be pounded very fine, and mixed with oatmeal, which being diſtributed about the garden, killed vaſt numbers of them. To prevent the bad effects of the grub-worm, I tried aſhes, lye of aſhes, and urine, but to no purpoſe, ſo that the women were kept conſtantly employed in picking them off the few plants we had left.

Out of ſix ewes which I brought to the iſland, five died with the ſcab, notwithſtanding every poſſible care was taken of them; and one of my ſows was poiſoned, by eating ſomething noxious in the woods. The remainder of my ſmall ſtock was likely to do very well; it conſiſted of two ewes, three ſows, two boars, four hens, one cock, three ducks, one drake, and one goat.

The ſugar-cane, two Rio Janeiro banana trees, and two orange trees, which I brought with me, were kept in tubs, until I ſhould find a ſheltered ſituation to plant them in. The wind ſeemed now to be ſet in from the ſouthward, and the weather was very raw and cold, ſo that I called this the beginning of winter. Another of my ſows was poiſoned on the 24th, ſo that I found it neceſſary to confine them in a hog-pen, which, in regard to feeding them, was a great inconvenience, as they uſed to provide very well for themſelves in the woods; fortunately, however, a tree was found which afforded them very good food: this tree grows to the height of eighty feet, and the branches, which reſemble thoſe of the palm-tree in their growth, fall off every year, leaving an indentation in the trunk. The leaves of theſe branches, which are twelve in number, are much like the heath-fern, from whence this tree obtained the name of the fern-tree. The middle of the tree, from the root to the apex, conſiſts of a white ſubſtance reſembling a yam, and when boiled, it taſtes like a bad turnip; this the hogs fed on very eagerly: the outſide of the trunk

trunk is hard wood, and full of regular indentations from the top to the bottom. The tree is found in great plenty in all parts of the iſland.

At the end of this month, I ſent ſome of the people to aſſiſt Mr. Altree, at the plantation in Arthur's Vale, which was the name I gave to the valley he had begun to clear; the reſt were employed in clearing the ground at Mount George, except three men, whom I ſet to dig a cellar under my houſe.

On the 8th of May, the two ſawyers, the carpenter, and three convicts were poiſoned, by eating ſome beans, which had a very tempting appearance, and much reſembled the Windſor bean: they had gathered a quantity, which were boiled, and afterwards fried with butter: in two hours time, they were ſeized with violent gripings, retchings, and cold ſweats; fortunately, I had a gallon of ſweet oil, which, with other medicines adminiſtered by the ſurgeon, happily gave them relief; but they were ſo much weakened and exhauſted that they were not able to work for a week afterwards.

As we could catch no fiſh from the ſhore, I launched the boat on the 9th, and ſent her

into the roads to fiſh; they returned with the boat in two hours, and brought thirty-ſix very fine fiſh, weighing from ſix to eight pounds each: theſe I cauſed to be iſſued out in lieu of ſalt proviſions, at the rate of ſix pounds of fiſh for one pound of beef.

This ample ſupply of fiſh was a moſt fortunate event; yet they could not be depended on as a conſtant reſource; for ſometimes it would happen, that a boat could not go without the reef for a fortnight together, on account of the very violent ſurf; but when a boat could be ſent out, there was no danger of catching a vaſt quantity.

On the 10th, I was obliged to inflict the puniſhment of forty laſhes on one of the convicts, for making uſe of very threatening and ſeditious language. I had received orders from Governor Phillip, to make a ſaving of the ſalt proviſions, whenever fiſh or turtle could be obtained, in order that they might laſt as long as poſſible: the putting this order in execution when the turtle were caught, produced murmuring; but, when the fiſh was iſſued on the 9th, the convict who was puniſhed, ſaid, "the people (meaning

" ing thoſe in the ſettlement) were fools for " ſuffering their ſalt proviſions to be ſtopped," and " that the convicts would ſoon be the " ſtrongeſt, and then it would be ſeen who " were maſters." As I thought this language deſerved puniſhment, I aſſembled the people, and pointed out to them, that, independent of the orders I had received, I ſaw the greateſt neceſſity for making every poſſible ſaving of the proviſions: I repreſented to them that misfortunes might happen to veſſels, proviſions might get ſpoiled, and many other accidents might happen, which would render it neceſſary for us to go to a ſhort allowance; and, that the greater quantity of proviſions which could be ſaved would be ſo much the better for the whole ſettlement: I concluded with aſſuring them, that I ſhould invariably attend to my orders, and put them in execution; and that a very ſevere puniſhment would be inflicted on any who preſumed to excite ſedition, or behaved improperly on that, or any other pretext.

On our firſt landing, we found a great number of pigeons, which were ſo tame, that we knocked them down with ſticks;

but latterly they quitted the low boughs, and generally harboured about the tops of the pines: when plucked and drawn, they weighed from three quarters to one pound each.

I now ſet the two ſawyers and two carpenters to work in building houſes; one man was employed in making a crab to heave the boat by, another attended the live-ſtock, and the remainder were buſied in clearing ground at Mount George and Arthur's Vale.

By the 17th, the rain was almoſt inceſſant, and, as I had every reaſon to ſuppoſe it would continue ſo three or four months longer, which would endanger the health of thoſe who lived in tents; I cauſed the proviſions to be removed from the ſtore-houſe to a cellar under my houſe, which was dry, and the ſtores I put into a loft; and, as five men and three women lived at preſent in tents, I put them into the ſtore-houſe, until they could build huts for themſelves. The whole ſettlement were now well ſheltered, except the ſurgeon and the midſhipman; for whom I propoſed to begin a houſe immediately.

On the 18th, the ſhell of my houſe was finiſhed: its dimenſions were twenty-four feet

feet long by twelve feet wide, and eight feet under the eaves: the ſides and roof were weather-boarded. I ſent the boat out this afternoon, and ſhe returned with fifty very fine fiſh, which were iſſued out as uſual.

I ſet out on the 19th, with an intention of tracing the rivulet which runs through Arthur's Vale, to its ſource, and likewiſe to examine the extent of the valley; but, after wandering about the greateſt part of the day, I returned back, much fatigued, and all the cloaths torn off my back by the briars and the entangled ſtate of the woods.

Arthur's Vale is ſituated between the north ſide of Mount George and the oppoſite hills: its direction is about north-north-weſt into the interior part of the iſland. The bottom of this valley, in ſome places, is not more than thirty yards wide; in others, at leaſt three hundred. The hills on each ſide are cloathed with a thick foreſt; their aſcent is not too ſteep for cultivation, and the ſoil is excellent, being a fat brown earth. A very fine rivulet runs through this vale, ſufficiently large to turn any number of mills. As the bank of the ſea-ſhore is conſiderably above

the level of the rivulet, it ſinks into the earth; and, after paſſing under the bank, it forces a paſſage for itſelf through a fiſſure of the rock, on Stony-Beach and Turtle-Bay, between high and low water marks, where it boils up with great force, and is excellent water. As the whole of this water is not carried off by the paſſage juſt mentioned, ſufficient to keep the low ground clear, what does not paſs under the bank, overflows the lower part of the vale, for the ſpace of half a mile.

That part of the valley which I have already ſaid Mr. Altree was clearing, is half a mile from the ſettlement, near a large cluſter of plantain trees; he tranſplanted ſome of the young ſuckers, an operation which was likely to improve them much: a garden, which meaſured ninety rods, was planted, and moſt of the plants were up and likely to do very well. The ſugar-cane, orange-trees, and Rio Janeiro plantains, which had hitherto been kept in tubs, were now planted in the vale, and I had hopes they would thrive, as the ſituation was well ſheltered: I alſo planted a quantity of cotton ſeeds, as ſome which were

were ſown when we firſt came on ſhore, rotted in the ground.

The 4th of June, being the anniverſary of his Majeſty's birth-day, I cauſed it to be obſerved as a holiday. The colours were hoiſted at ſun-riſe; every perſon had a good dinner, of the produce of the iſland, and I gave the convicts ſome liquor to drink their ſovereign's health: the evening concluded with bonfires, which, excluſive of the joy we felt at the return of his Majeſty's birth-day, and the celebrating it in this diſtant part of the globe, we with pleaſure ſaw ſome large piles of wood burnt that had been a long time collecting, and which were a great incumbrance to us.

At day-light in the morning of the 15th of June, the midſhipman and four men went out in the boat to fiſh: they were returning at nine o'clock, and in paſſing the point of the reef, the fine weather, and the abſence of the ſurf, threw them ſo much off their guard, that the boat ſhipped a ſea which filled her, and waſhed John Batchelor, a marine, overboard: the boat, with the reſt of the men, drove in among the rocks to the weſtward of the landing-place, where they were ſaved with great difficulty, having received violent

violent contuſions. The boat was got round to the crab and hove up; ſhe was much damaged, and her repairs were likely to take up a conſiderable time, as I had only two men who could aſſiſt in this buſineſs.

We planted upwards of one thouſand cabbages on the 23d of July, and every vegetable at the plantation was in a thriving ſtate: we had turnips, carrots, lettuces of three ſorts, onions, leeks, parſley, cellery, five ſorts of cabbages, corn-ſallad, artichokes, and beet in great forwardneſs; but there was reaſon to fear that the potatoes and yams were quite deſtroyed by the grub-worm.

At five in the evening of the 26th, the Supply hove in ſight, coming round Point Roſs: ſhe ran to leeward of this iſland, between Nepean and Phillip Iſles, to ride out the gale, which blew very ſtrong at weſt-ſouth-weſt. Mr. Waterhouſe, and a midſhipman belonging to the Supply, arrived at the ſettlement on the 27th, with my diſpatches from the governor; they were ſent by Lieutenant Ball, who landed them in Ball's-Bay. I found the Supply had brought proviſions, tools, and ſeeds of various kinds for the ſettlement.

I received a meſſage from Lieutenant Ball on the 29th, intimating, that as the wind was ſoutherly and blew ſtrong, he meant to anchor under the north-eaſt part of the iſland; and as I expected he would anchor in Caſcade-Bay, I ſent a man acroſs the iſland on the 30th with a letter for him.

At ten in the morning of the 31ſt, the Supply's boat landed with ſome light articles; Lieutenant Ball ſent a carpenter in her to offer his aſſiſtance in building a convenient boat for the uſe of the ſettlement: I directed him to begin his work immediately, and ſet the ſawyers to work in ſawing plank for his uſe. The other workmen were employed in turning up a piece of ground to ſow two pecks of good ſeed wheat on, which came in the Supply.

From the 1ſt to the 4th of Auguſt, the wind blew very ſtrong from the ſouthward, which prevented the Supply from coming on that ſide of the iſland; but at ſun-ſet on the 4th, the wind veering to north-eaſt, ſhe came round Point Roſs, and anchored in the roads. The man whom I ſent on the 30th of July acroſs the iſland to find the Supply, returned this day at noon, much exhauſted and

and fatigued: he had loſt his way, and had been without food for three days; fortunately, the Supply was ſtanding in for the ſhore and ſaw him, otherwiſe he muſt have periſhed.

Landing was very ſafe in the afternoon of the 5th, and we received on ſhore a part of the proviſions and ſtores.

At day-light in the morning of the 6th, we hoiſted the colours as a ſignal that the landing was ſafe, and at ſeven o'clock the colours were ſtruck half ſtaff, this being the ſignal that landing was dangerous, the ſurf having conſiderably increaſed with the flowing tide. At half paſt ſeven the Supply weighed, and ſoon aftewards ſhe hove to and hoiſted her boats out, and ſent them towards the ſhore. I perceived her ſmall boat was determined to come in, and being apprehenſive that ſome accident might happen, I ordered Mr. Cunningham (the mate) into our boat, with four men, to lie within the point of the reef, in order to aſſiſt the Supply's boat, ſhould any misfortune happen to her: unfortunately, our boat was ſwept away to the weſtward by the tide, and whilſt they were endeavouring to get under the point of the reef again, a heavy ſurf broke on her broad-

broadſide and overſet her. The anguiſh I felt at this ſhocking accident may be more eaſily conceived than deſcribed: ſmall as our numbers were before, they were now decreaſed by the loſs of Mr. Cunningham, (whom I ſincerely cheriſhed as a good young man) the ſawyer, and one of the beſt of the convicts; a ſeaman belonging to the Supply was alſo drowned, and another convict narrowly eſcaped the ſame fate. Immediately after this dreadful misfortune the Supply's jolly-boat landed with three caſks of flour, and as the large boat was coming near the ſhore, I ordered ſome muſquets to be fired, on which ſhe returned on board: the Supply bore up, and ran to the leeward of the iſland. At one o'clock, there being ſcarcely any ſurf, the jolly-boat went off, and ran to leeward of the iſland, to get on board the brig.

On the 7th, I was obliged to puniſh one of the convicts with thirty-ſix laſhes, for ſtealing a hatch of eggs from under a hen which was ſitting on them. At day-light on the 8th, the Supply anchored in the road, and the landing being good, we received part of the proviſions and ſtores; the remainder were landed on the 10th.

Our

Our new boat being finiſhed, I ſent the carpenter and Mr. Waterhouſe on board the Supply, in the morning of the 11th, with my letters for the Governor; and ſoon afterwards ſhe hoiſted her colours, and ſet ſail for Port Jackſon.

At ſun-riſe on the 12th of Auguſt, we hoiſted the colours, in obſervance of the birth-day of his Royal Highneſs the Prince of Wales; and the ſame day a rood and an half of ground was ſown with a peck of ſeed wheat, which I received by the Supply.

The frequent accidents which had happened to boats here, made me anxious to ſearch for a better landing-place, or a place where landing might be practicable, when the ſurf ran too high to land in Sydney-Bay; and Lieutenant Ball having mentioned one as likely in Caſcade-Bay, on the north ſide of the iſland, I ſet out at day-light in the morning of the 17th of Auguſt, taking three men along with me, in ſearch of it, propoſing, at the ſame time, to examine Ball-Bay in my road. I left the ſurgeon commanding officer at the ſettlement, and I cannot help teſtifying the great ſatisfaction I felt at having a perſon of his character to ſuperintend the work

work in my abſence; and his ſteadineſs and general knowledge made him a valuable aſſociate. After climbing and deſcending a number of ſteep hills, and cutting our way through the thick woods which covered ſome ſmall plains, we arrived at a gully to the weſtward of Ball-Bay, about eleven o'clock; from whence we walked round to the bay by the ſea-ſhore, it being low water.

I paſſed the remainder of the day here, and ſlept under a tent which I had brought with me. The next morning at day-light, we ſet out from Ball-Bay in order to go to Caſcade-Bay, on the north ſide of the iſland, which is not more than three miles diſtant, yet we did not arrive there before five o'clock in the afternoon, quite exhauſted and fatigued; having been under the neceſſity of cutting our way through the entangled underwood, which intercepted us in every direction.

The landing-place mentioned by Lieutenant Ball is on a rock, a little detached from the iſland, and has communication with it at half tide: there is no objection to this being a very good landing-place, if it were not for the almoſt total impoſſibility of getting any article of proviſions or ſtores further than the rock,

rock, which is at leaſt three hundred yards from the valley that leads down to it. We paſſed the night in the valley above the caſcade: this valley is extenſive, and a very large deep rivulet runs through it.

At day-light on the 19th, we ſet out on our return to Sydney-Bay, where we arrived at four in the afternoon, with ſcarcely a rag to cover ourſelves, the cloaths being torn off our backs by the briars.

The wheat which we had ſown on the 12th and 17th of Auguſt, was all out of the ground by the 24th, and had a very promiſing appearance.

Early in the morning of the 25th, the ſurgeon, with ſix men, went to Ball-Bay, to make a commencement on the creek; taking a week's proviſions and four tents along with them.

I viſited this party on the 27th, and found they had made good progreſs, conſidering that their labour was greatly retarded by neap-tides, and an eaſterly wind, which threw a great ſurf upon the beach.

The ſurgeon and his party returned on the 30th, and on the 1ſt of September at day-light, I ſet out, with ſome men, to ſee what

further

further could be effected: we got to the bay by half paſt eight o'clock, and found the tides of the preceding day had thrown a number of looſe ſmall ſtones into the cut. As the tide ebbed, I directed the labourers to clear away a number of large ſtones which lay in the entrance of the cut; and at low water, all the ſtones were removed as far out as poſſible, which was compleated at five o'clock in the afternoon. The cut was about three feet deep, and at half tide there was upwards of ſix feet at the entrance: with any other wind than between ſouth-weſt and north-weſt, there is a ſurf on the beach, which often breaks with ſo much violence, as to render any attempt to land highly dangerous. As I found every thing done at this place, which could be effected with the ſmall number of men I had, we returned to Sydney-Bay on the 3d.

Hitherto, the people on the ſettlement had not done much work for themſelves; and, all the good ſeed of Indian corn being ſown, I gave every perſon liberty from this time till the 14th, to clear away their gardens, and ſow them. For four days paſt, a ſingle turtle had been obſerved on the beach;

I was loth to turn it, hoping it would draw others on, but finding that did not happen, it was turned on the 6th day, and brought to the ſettlement, where it was ſerved out as uſual.

This turtle had been recently wounded between the ſhoulders with a kind of peg; which circumſtance, together with ſome pieces of canoes, a wooden image reſembling a man, and a freſh cocoa-nut, found in Ball-Bay, induced me to ſuppoſe that there is a conſiderable iſland undiſcovered, not far from the eaſtward of Norfolk-Iſland. The Indian corn ſown during the laſt and preſent month, was now all up, and likely to do well.

As the houſes and tents were ſurrounded by a thick wood, I ſet the men to make an opening to the ſea ſide, by cutting down the trees and piling up the timber.

In the courſe of this month, we ſaw a great number of whales and thraſhers, ſome of which came cloſe to the reef: indeed, on our firſt landing here, I found the entire ſkeletons of two whales, which had every appearance of having been driven on ſhore, and the fleſh deſtroyed by rats and birds.

On

On counting ſome of the plants of barley, I found one grain produced 124 ſtalks; this pleaſing proſpect induced me to ſet about building a granary of eighteen feet long by twelve feet wide; and I ſet the ſawyers and carpenters to work in ſawing wood for that purpoſe.

In the beginning of October, we found a ſenſible alteration in the weather, it being very warm, except the mornings and evenings, which were ſtill cold: gales of wind were leſs frequent, and the landing was better in general than it had been for two months back. Some heavy rain fell on the 3d, which lodged the barley, that had been ſome time in ear, and the rats got to it, ſo that our return was likely to be but ſmall. The Indian corn, which was about eight inches high, ſuffered greatly from the grub-worm, which got into the plant and cut it off cloſe to the ground, deſtroying forty or fifty plants in the courſe of one night, which obliged me to keep the women conſtantly employed in picking them off: every other remedy was tried; ſuch as ſprinkling aſhes, and lye of aſhes, round the roots, but with no good effect.

On the 13th, at day-light, we ſaw the Golden Grove tranſport lying at an anchor

in the road, and ſoon afterwards Mr. Donovan, a midſhipman belonging to the Sirius, came on ſhore, and delivered the governor's letters: by this gentleman I alſo received a letter from Mr. Blackburn, the maſter of the Supply, informing me that he ſailed from Port Jackſon on the 24th of September, being ordered by Governor Phillip to conduct the tranſport to this iſland; that he had brought Mr. Donovan, a ſerjeant, a corporal, and five private marines, two gardeners, who were ſeamen belonging to the Sirius, and twenty-one men and eleven women convicts; alſo the Supply's jolly-boat and boat's crew, to aſſiſt in unloading the Golden-Grove.

In the courſe of the 15th, we received on ſhore the party of marines and all the convicts; alſo moſt of the ſtores, and ſome proviſions. The next day we landed 56 caſks of flour, and 18 caſks of ſalt proviſions, beſides a quantity of ſtores.

This day I turned a turtle, which weighed 200 pounds.

CHAP-

CHAPTER XI.

Quantity of proviſions received by the Golden Grove.—Timber ſent to Port Jackſon.—Number of perſons on the ſettlement.—Nepean and Phillip Iſlands deſcribed.—Corn reaped.—Taſk-work of the convicts.—The free-people exerciſed.—Plot to ſeize the iſland diſcovered.—Orders made public for the preſervation of regularity.—Oath of allegiance adminiſtered.—Proviſions and ſtores examined.

HAVING received inſtructions from Governer Phillip to ſend all the uſeful timber I conveniently could to Port Jackſon, I ſet the men to work in cutting ſpars, and ſawing boards for that purpoſe. The Golden Grove anchored in the road in the morning of the 18th of October. The ſame afternoon we landed eighteen caſks of flour, and ten of ſalt proviſions.

Landing was very good until the evening of the 21ſt, and during that time we received the whole of the ſtores and proviſions from the Golden Grove: I alſo received two ſows and fourteen young pigs belonging to the crown, and a ſhe-goat, which was the property of Mr. Collins, the judge-advocate.

The proviſions received were—one hundred and twenty-ſix barrels of flour, thirty-nine tierces of beef, and twenty-two tierces of pork, twenty-three firkins of butter, thirty-three caſks of peas, and five puncheons of rum, which were about ſeventeen months proviſions at the following ratio:—For one man for a week, flour, ſeven pounds: beef, three pounds and a half: pork, two pounds: butter, ſix ounces: peas, three pints. For one woman for a week, flour, four pounds and a half: beef, two pounds and a quarter: pork, one pound and a quarter: butter, four ounces: peas, two pints. It ſhould be obſerved, that the above ratio was full avoirdupoiſe weight, without any deduction whatever.

From this time to the 28th, we had only three days good landing, during which a number of ſpars and planks were ſent on board the Golden Grove, for Port Jackſon.

As I was very much in want of a carpenter, a man who had been diſcharged from the Sirius, and was on board the Golden Grove as a ſailor, offered to remain on the iſland on any terms, but I could make no agreement with him, not being impowered to take any ſtep of that kind; I therefore informed him, that if he choſe to remain he muſt take it on himſelf;

himſelf: this he with great readineſs conſented to, and I found him a great acquiſition.

The Golden Grove ſailed for Port Jackſon on the 29th of October.

As an encouragement to the convicts who came by the Golden Grove, I gave them from the time of their landing until the 30th to build houſes for themſelves, and to clear away a little garden ground. The huts were very ſoon built, being compoſed of logs, and thatched with bullruſhes and flags, which made them very comfortable; and as a farther encouragement, I gave ſome of them (who had the beſt characters) permiſſion to build their houſes in the vale, and to clear away ground near them for their own uſe.

The ſettlement now conſiſted of the following perſons, viz.

Mr. Stephen Donovan, midſhipman of the Sirius -	1
Mr. Thomas Jamieſon, ſurgeon's firſt mate of ditto -	1
Mr. John Altree, aſſiſtant-ſurgeon	1
Roger Morley, Robert Webb, Thomas Webb, ſeamen belonging to ditto -	3
	6

Brought over	6	
John Livington, carpenter, late belonging to ditto -	1	
Serjeant, corporal, ſix private marines - -	8	16 free.
Male convicts -	29	
Female convicts -	17	
The total number, beſides two children -	61	

On the 14th of November, I planted about thirty rod of ground with Indian corn: ſome, which had been planted in September, was now five feet high, and the wheat grew ſo very rank that I was obliged to crop it.

On the 29th, I landed on Nepean Iſland, and found it to conſiſt entirely of one maſs of ſand, held together by the ſurrounding cliffs, which are a border of hard rocks; notwithſtanding there was not the leaſt appearance of earth or mould on the iſland, yet there were upwards of two hundred very fine pines growing on it; the ſurface was covered with a kind of coarſe graſs.

The weather being now very hot, I changed the working hours, and gave the labourers from half paſt ten o'clock until half paſt twelve, to avoid the heat of the ſun: they were employed

in

in clearing ground for cultivation, making ſhingles, cutting a road from the ſettlement to Ball Bay, and reaping wheat and barley.

The heat of the ſun ſplit the weather boarding with which my houſe was covered; and it being very leaky, I ſet the carpenters and ſawyers to work to put a new roof on, and to raiſe the houſe five feet, in order to make room for ſtores and proviſions.

At day-light in the morning of the 2d of December, I went in the coble to Phillip Iſle, where I landed on a rock, in a ſmall bay on the north ſide. It was with difficulty that I aſcended the firſt hills, which were covered with a ſharp long graſs that cut like a knife; this was interſperſed with bruſhwood. The ſoil is a light red earth, and was ſo full of holes, which had been made by the birds, that walking was very laborious. A ſmall valley runs the whole length of the iſland, in which, and on ſome of the hills, a few pines grow, but I think the whole iſland does not produce more than one hundred and fifty. I found no freſh water on the iſland, but probably there may be ſome, as I ſaw a number of hawks, pigeons, and parrots; but as I had only two convicts to row the boat, I left the iſland, and got to Sydney Bay in the evening.

On

On the 8th, I houſed all the barley which had been raiſed on an acre of ground, and was ſown in June and July. During the firſt of its growth, it had a moſt promiſing appearance, but when the ear was ſhot and nearly filled, ſome heavy rains in September laid a great part of it down, and the quantity deſtroyed by the rats and quails was almoſt incredible: there was every proſpect of getting at leaſt fifty buſhels of grain, but the whole quantity, when gleaned, yielded only ten buſhels. The barley was very fine, and 116 ears were produced from one grain. Garden vegetables throve very well, and cabbages were cut weighing twenty-ſix pounds each. Moſt of the marines and convicts had now very good gardens, but the grub-worm was a great and perpetual enemy to their vegetables.

Some wheat was reaped on the 22d of December, which had been ſown on the 11th of Auguſt: the grain was very full and fine, but as it was ſown late, the ſtock was not ſo fine as might have been expected.

The 25th, being Chriſtmas-day, it was obſerved as a holyday. The colours were hoiſted at ſun-riſe: I performed divine ſervice; the officers dined with me, and I gave each of the convicts half a pint of rum, and

double

double allowance of beef, to celebrate the feſtival: the evening concluded with bonfires, which conſiſted of large piles of wood, that had been previouſly collected for the occaſion.

I now began to perceive a very great difference between the work done ſince the arrival of the convicts by the Golden-Grove, and what was done before, in proportion to our numbers; the reaſon was, that when the number of convicts was increaſed, I had not perſons ſufficient to overlook them and keep them at work; I therefore adopted the plan of taſking them; for which purpoſe I conſulted thoſe whom I thought converſant in the different employments that were carrying on; and their opinions, added to what I had obſerved myſelf, determined me to fix the different taſks as follow, with which they were all contented. Six men were to cut the timber down on an acre of ground in one week: ſix men to clear away and turn up an acre of ground fit for receiving ſeed, in twenty-eight days: two ſawyers to ſaw one hundred feet of ſawing each day. At theſe taſks the convicts would have an opportunity of ſaving time to themſelves; and, as that time

time was to be employed in clearing gardens and ground to cultivate for their own uſe, what was thus ſaved from the public work would not be loſt to ſociety; although it was to be feared that ſome would paſs their time in idleneſs.

Having ſix muſquets on the iſland, excluſive of the marines arms, I thought it neceſſary to inſtruct the few free perſons I had (which were ſix) in the uſe of fire-arms, in caſe the marines ſhould be ſick, or any other exigency ſhould happen; I therefore gave orders to Mr. Donovan to exerciſe them every Saturday morning; and the ſerjeant was to exercife the marines at the ſame time, or oftener: I intended that the former, after they were a little expert, ſhould fire half a dozen rounds once a month.

The 8th of January, 1789, uſhered a male child into the world, and as he was the firſt born on the iſland, he was baptized by the name of Norfolk. At noon on the 15th, parties were ſent out in ſearch of the cockſwain of the coble, who had loſt himſelf in the woods, as he was returning from Ball-Bay, where the boat had been hauled up the preceding day at ſun-ſet: he was found on the

the 18th, naked and almoſt exhauſted, inſomuch that he was obliged to be carried to the ſettlement, having received ſeveral deep cuts and bruiſes which rendered him incapable of getting out of his bed for ſome time.

The weather, during this month, was very fine and ſettled, and the wind northerly until the 22d; from which time, to the end of the month, we had conſtant heavy rain, without an hour's interval of dry weather: ſuch a continuance of rainy weather I never heard of.

On the 23d, Robert Webb, a ſeaman belonging to the Sirius, but who was employed as a gardener on the iſland, came to me, and ſignified a wiſh to ſpeak with me in private, which being granted, he informed me that a plan had been concerted among the convicts, to ſurprize me, with the reſt of the officer, marines, and free people; and to poſſeſs themſelves of the public ſtores, and afterwards to endeavour to ſurprize the Supply, or any other veſſel that might come here, and make their eſcape from the iſland. On my interrogating him, he ſaid that Elizabeth Anderſon, a female convict, who lived with him, had given him this information

the

the day before. As I thought it neceſſary to ſubſtantiate this information, I cauſed Robert Webb and Elizabeth Anderſon to be kept apart, and took their depoſitions on oath ſeparately, both of which perfectly agreed in every particular, and were in ſubſtance as follow:

" That yeſterday (the 22d.) between nine " in the morning and noon, Elizabeth An- " derſon being waſhing, ſhe ſighed, when " William Francis, who ſtood near her, " aſked what ſhe ſighed for; ſhe anſwered, " ſhe was very low; William Francis then " aſked her, if ſhe could get her liberty, " whether ſhe would leave Webb, and on her " ſaying yes, he ſaid, the firſt ſhip that " comes here, except the Sirius, we will " every man and woman have our liberty, " to which we were all ſworn laſt Saturday; " and we, (the convicts) would have had " it already, if the Sirius was not the firſt " ſhip expected." Francis added, " that " it was propoſed to take the Golden-Grove " on her paſſage, as they (the convicts) " were all for it, except one man, and he " was the forwardeſt in the preſent plot. " Robert Webb appearing, put an end to

" this

" this converſation; and Elizabeth Anderſon
" repeated to Webb all that paſſed between
" her and Francis; on Robert Webb's ſuſ-
" pecting the ſtory being an invention of
" hers; they agreed that he ſhould lie con-
" cealed in the bed, which had a curtain
" made of a piece of tent, while ſhe ſhould
" endeavour to draw from Francis a fuller
" account of the plan laid by him and the
" reſt of the convicts; and this morning
" (the 23d.) at day-light, Robert Webb
" being ſtill in bed, Elizabeth Anderſon got
" up, and on ſeeing Francis near the hut,
" ſhe wiſhed him the 'good morrow,' and
" informed him that Webb was gone to
" town to grind his tools; ſhe then ſaid,
" come Bill, ſit down and drink a little rum,
" it will do us both good, and drink to the
" boys of the ſhip that will take us from
" this place:' to which health they both
" drank. Elizabeth Anderſon then aſked
" Francis how long it was ſince they (the
" convicts) had planned the ſcheme; he ſaid
" they were all ſworn on this Saturday month
" paſt, at Thompſon's, in the vale, ex-
" cepting Widdicome and Rice, (convict
" rope-makers,) who were Mr. King's right-

" hand

" hand men, and therefore not to be truſted:
" Lucas (the convict carpenter) had not
" been aſked, but they were ſure he would
" be on their ſide, when they (the convicts)
" got the day: Francis continued ſaying,
" 'I'll tell you how it is to be done; the
" whole is left to my management, and the
" beſt time will be the firſt Saturday after
" the arrival of any other veſſel than the
" Sirius. Moſt of the marines and free
" people will be getting wood cabbages, and
" as Mr. King generally goes to the farm
" twice a day, in his abſence I will ſtep into
" his houſe and hand out the arms to my
" men; then I will go out and take Mr.
" King, and after that the other officers,
" and what marines are in camp, and the
" reſt as they come in from cabbaging:
" we will then put them all in irons, two
" and two together, when they will be as
" helpleſs as bees. We will then make the
" ſignal for a boat, and when ſhe lands,
" we'll *nab* the boat's crew; then ſend the
" coble off with Mr. King's compliments,
" and requeſt another boat may be ſent to
" carry off plank, as the firſt boat was
" ſtove, and the coble could not carry lug-
" gage:

" gage: when the ſecond boat comes, the " people belonging to it will be *nabbed*, and " the two boats with the coble will be filled " with our people (the convicts) and the " women, and take poſſeſſion of the ſhip. " Three of the ſailors might remain, if they " were willing, and one officer ſhould be " kept to navigate the ſhip; the reſt of the " officers and ſhip's company will be left on " Nepean or Phillip-Iſland, with the coble, " from whence they might go to Norfolk-" Iſland and liberate the commandant. Eliz-" abeth Anderſon then expreſſed her wiſhes " that it might ſucceed, and Francis left " her."

The taking Webb and Anderſon's depoſitions, and interrogating them, took up two hours; and it being Saturday, moſt of the convicts were out getting cabbages: there was a poſſibility that the accuſation againſt William Francis might be an invention; yet, having received that information, it became neceſſary to uſe every precaution againſt a ſurprize; I therefore ordered a conſtant guard of three privates, to be commanded by Mr. Dunnavan, the ſerjeant, and corporal, and a guard-houſe was built between my houſe and

the ſurgeon's, in which the proviſions and ſtores were depoſited. The ſtore-houſe occupied by the marines, I removed from the water ſide nearer to my houſe. Every perſon, without exception, was ordered to live in the town, or camp, and I recalled the party who had been ſent to Ball-Bay. Being ſtill deſirous to obtain fuller proof of the criminality of the parties concerned in this diabolical ſcheme, I deſired Meſſrs. Dunnavan and Jamieſon to watch the return of John Bryant, a convict, who had always behaved very well: they were to interrogate him reſpecting the plan laid by the convicts, and to aſſure him of a pardon, if he would diſcover all he knew. I alſo ſent to the houſe of William Thompſon, in the Vale, to ſearch for any written agreement that might have been drawn up, but none was found; however, the perſons employed in this ſearch found a quantity of Indian corn in a cheſt in Thompſon's houſe, which, from its not being quite hard, muſt have been ſtolen from the King's grounds in Arthur's Vale, as there was no other on the iſland. The next ſtep I took was to order William Francis, John Thompſon, Samuel Picket, and Joſhua Peck to be taken into cuſtody, on their return from cabbaging.

Meſſrs.

Meſſrs. Dunnavan and Jamieſon met John Bryant, and perſuaded him to diſcover all he knew about the plot; preſently afterwards, they brought him before me, when he was ſworn on the croſs, being a catholic, and I took his depoſition; the ſubſtance of which was as follows:

"That on the paſſage from Port Jackſon "to Norfolk-Iſland it was talked among the "convicts to take the Golden-Grove tranſ- "port from the officers and crew and run "away with her, and on its being propoſed "to Bryant he ſaid they could be only fools "to think of ſuch a thing. That in going "out to work on the 14th of this month "with all the convicts, Samuel Picket re- "marked how eaſy it would be to take the "iſland, by making the commandant pri- "ſoner, when going to, or returning from, "the farm in Arthur's Vale; after which, "coming in and ſeizing the arms, and making "priſoners of the marines and other free "people. It was ſoon after agreed that the "reſt of the convicts were to be conſulted, "and if they were willing, a meeting was "to be held at John Thompſon's houſe in

" the Vale; Samuel Picket and Joſhua Peck " being inmates of his."

The remainder of Bryant's depoſition, reſpecting how the iſland was to be taken, agreed in every particular with the teſtimony of Elizabeth Anderſon and Robert Webb.

It was now clear to me that a ſcheme had been entered into, in which all the convicts were concerned, except the rope-makers and carpenter already mentioned; and their ſucceeding in it, ſo far as regarded the taking myſelf and the officers priſoners, was not to be doubted; for, I muſt own, I was not ſufficiently upon my guard againſt the deſcription of people I had to deal with; as the apparent ſatisfaction which they often expreſſed at being on this iſland in preference to Port Jackſon, added to the great indulgencies they had frequently received from me, lulled any ſuſpicion of their having the moſt diſtant idea of the kind. The ſecond part of their plan, viz. that of taking any ſhip which might come to the iſland, was very doubtful; but had the firſt ſucceeded, the deſtruction of the proviſions and ſtores would have followed; and it is difficult to ſay what fatal conſequences would have enſued from the drunken

ſtate

ſtate they would have been in whilſt the rum laſted: indeed, I muſt in juſtice to them obſerve, that no ſanguinary meaſures were thought of; on the contrary, they propoſed good treatment to myſelf and the free people; but how far that intention would have been obſerved by a ſet of men of their deſcription, when in a ſtate of drunken madneſs, may eaſily be conceived.

I ordered Samuel Picket and William Francis to wear irons, and the next day (Sunday), after prayers, I addreſſed the convicts, and pointed out to them the abſurdity of their plan, admitting they had made themſelves maſters of a veſſel. I endeavoured to convince them of the advantages they enjoyed on this iſland, where nothing but induſtry was requiſite to inſure them a happy and comfortable livelihood; after which, I exhorted them to let their future conduct wipe away the preſent impropriety of their behaviour: thoſe who diſtinguiſhed themſelves by a regular, honeſt, and induſtrious line of conduct, I promiſed to countenance and encourage, whilſt thoſe of a contrary deſcription were ſure to be made ſevere and dreadful examples of. I likewiſe cautioned them

againſt ſtealing and plundering the grounds and gardens; aſſuring them that they would be ſeverely puniſhed on detection.

Having finiſhed my addreſs to the convicts, I cauſed the following orders to be read, in addition to thoſe which were before made public for the preſervation of order.

"The commandant ſtrictly forbids any officer, ſoldier, free perſon, or convict, male or female, ever abſenting themſelves from the camp or town for ten minutes together, without having firſt obtained leave from the officer charged with the guard, who will obtain the commandant's leave, if he ſhould think fit to grant it.

"Every perſon returning from that leave, is to acquaint the officer of the guard of their return.

"Every convict who is obſerved to go over the hill to the farm, without having obtained leave, or going to work there, will be fired at by the centinel.

"The convicts, and not more than three together, are to build houſes for themſelves, at their leiſure hours, in ſuch places as will be pointed out.

"No

"No perſon for the future will be ſuffered to live out of the camp.

"John Thompſon and Samuel Pickett are diſpoſſeſſed of their garden-ground, in conſequence of their ill behaviour."

Though I had not the moſt diſtant reaſon to ſuſpect any free perſon whatever, of being in the leaſt diſaffected, yet I judged it neceſſary to finiſh this affair by adminiſtering the oaths of allegiance and fidelity to the officers, marines, and free people individually, in the preſence of the convicts. The whole of the convicts were now employed in cutting down trees, and clearing the ground near the houſe, in order to give more room for building others.

The month of February commenced with heavy gales of wind and deluges of rain, which greatly damaged the Indian corn, and different plants that were ſeeding. The ſmall patch of barley which was cut on the 20th of laſt month, was quite ſpoiled by the conſtant rain, and the ſwamp was entirely overflowed. The 15th, being Sunday, after performing divine ſervice, and reading the orders, I forgave the priſoners, Samuel Pickett and William Francis, for their ill behaviour in the affair of the plot; but it was my intention to

ſend Francis to Port Jackſon the firſt opportunity, as he was a worthleſs, troubleſome villain.

The heavy rains had now in a great meaſure ſubſided, and the weather on the 16th being fair, we embraced the opportunity of examining the proviſions which were ſtowed in the cellars. On getting up the ground tier of flour caſks from under the ſurgeon's houſe, I found a quantity of water had lodged amongſt them: and although they were well dunnaged, yet we found many of the caſks much damaged, and the flour in them ſpoiled; but the quantity loſt could not immediately be aſcertained: however, it was of the utmoſt conſequence to have the whole overlooked, and every perſon was employed till the 21ſt in cleaning the flour and ſeparating the damaged part of it from that which was dry and in good condition.

CHAPTER XII.

A violent hurricane at Norfolk-Iſland.—Arrival of the Supply.—Convicts ſent from Port-Jackſon.—Proviſions and ſtores.—Departure of the Supply.—Robberies committed.—Employment of the convicts.—Wheat infeſted with caterpillars.—A ſtore-houſe erected.—Arrival of a party of marines from Port-Jackſon.—Thefts committed.—Orders read for preſerving regularity.—A female convict puniſhed.—Pernicious effects of the grub-worm.—Gardens plundered.—A granary erected.—Wheat deſtroyed by parroquets.—Number of inhabitants on the iſland.

THE interval of fine weather, which gave us an opportunity of examining the ſtate of our proviſions, and cleaning the damaged flour, was ſucceeded by a hurricane that was dreadful beyond deſcription. In the morning of the 25th of February, we had light winds from the north-eaſt, and very diſmal, dark, cloudy weather, with conſtant torrents of heavy rain: towards noon, the wind blew a heavy gale, and kept increaſing in

in violence. At midnight, it ſhifted to eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, and blew with great fury, attended with conſtant deluges of rain. At four o'clock the next morning ſeveral of the largeſt pines were blown up by the roots, one of which fell on the hog-ſtye, and killed a very fine Engliſh ſow and a litter of ſeven pigs that were my property, and three ſows and two boars belonging to the crown. This was a ſevere loſs to young coloniſts, but a ſtill worſe accident afterwards happened, and which had nearly deprived us of our flour.

From four in the morning until noon, the wind increaſed to a very ſevere hurricane, with the heavieſt rain I ever ſaw or heard of. Pines, and oak-trees of the largeſt ſize, were blown down every inſtant; the roots were torn up, together with rocks that ſurrounded them; frequently leaving pits at leaſt ten feet deep. Some of the very large trees, which meaſured 180 feet in length, and four feet diameter, were thrown by the violence of the tempeſt to a conſiderable diſtance from the place where they grew; and others, whoſe roots were too deep in the earth to be torn up, bent their tops nearly to the ground. In addition to the horror of this ſcene, a very large

large tree fell acroſs the granary and daſhed it to pieces, ſtaving a number of flour caſks that were in it; but by the general activity of every perſon on the ſettlement, the flour, Indian corn, and ſtores were in a ſhort time collected, and removed to my houſe, with the loſs of a few pounds of flour and ſome ſmall ſtores that were blown away. The gale now raged with the moſt violent fury, which defies all deſcription: whole foreſts ſeemed, as it were, ſwept away by the roots, and many of the trees were carried to a conſiderable diſtance. By one o'clock in the afternoon, there were as many trees blown down round the ſettlement as would have employed fifty men for a fortnight to cut down. The ſwamp and the adjoining vale were overflowed, and had every appearance of a large, navigable river: the ſurf ran mountains high, but did not overflow the bank, although very near its level: in the road, the ſea ran very high, often eclipſing Nepean-Iſle. At two in the afternoon, the gardener, two convict men, and one woman, who lived in the vale, came to the ſettlement, having narrowly eſcaped with their lives from the falling of trees, and great depth of water in many parts

of

of the valley; and their houſes, which had been built and framed with ſtrong logs, were blown down. Three acres of ground that had recently been cleared were almoſt covered with trees: every thing in the gardens was nearly deſtroyed, and an acre of Indian corn, which was in a promiſing ſtate, and nearly fit for reaping, was laid flat and covered with water four feet deep; nay, incredible as it may appear, the violence of the wind blew up cabbages, turnips, and other vegetables by the roots; and what remained in the gardens were turned as black as if they had been burnt. At three o'clock, the wind veered round to ſouth, and moderated, and at ſun-ſet, the weather was very pleaſant.

It was a providential circumſtance that the diſcovery of the plot (as has already been related) happened previous to this dreadful ſtorm, as, on that account, the convicts had altogether been employed in cutting down large trees round the ſettlement, to make room for building other houſes: had not this been done, our houſes would probably have been deſtroyed and many lives loſt, as we had no aſylum or retreat whatever: fortunately, however, only one man was hurt; he received

received a violent contuſion on his right ſide by the branch of a tree falling on him. There was no appearance on any part of the iſland of ſuch a ſtorm having ever happened before.

On the 2d of March, at day-light, we ſaw the Supply in the road; on which I ſent Mr. Dunnavan on board her: he ſoon returned, bringing letters for me from Governor Phillip, who, I learnt, had ſent twenty-one men and ſix women convicts, with three children in the Supply, to be landed on this iſland. As I had the fulleſt confidence in the few free perſons who were with me, I did not heſitate one moment in receiving the additional number of convicts who were now arrived, although ſome of them had very bad characters. By the Supply I alſo received a buſhel of potatoes, and ſome ſeed-wheat and barley, that had been ſaved at Port-Jackſon.

By the 7th we received every article on ſhore that was intended for the ſettlement, and in the afternoon of the 10th, the Supply made ſail for Port-Jackſon.

I gave the convicts who were newly arrived until the 18th, to build habitations for themſelves; the others were employed at taſk-work.

I have

I have hitherto forborne mentioning the numerous thefts that had almoſt daily been committed; and, notwithſtanding the utmoſt vigilance, we had not been able to detect any perſon. Gardens had been conſtantly plundered; the harneſs-caſk, containing the proviſions that were daily iſſued out, had been robbed; and one night an attempt was made to get into the upper part of my houſe, where the ſlops were depoſited. Great rewards had been offered to tempt one or other to diſcover their accomplices, but without effect: however, at eleven o'clock in the night of the 23d of March, Thomas Watſon, a convict, was detected in another convict's houſe, ſtealing a bag of flour.

From the number of daring thefts which had been committed, without my being able to fix on the thief, it became neceſſary to inflict a very ſevere puniſhment on this offender; and as I had no authority to give him any very ſevere corporal chaſtiſement, after examining witneſſes upon oath, and fully proving the theft, I ordered him into confinement, with an intention of ſending him to Port-Jackſon to take his trial. In order to prevent theſe depredations as much as poſ-

ſible

ſible in future, I gave orders for the convicts to be muſtered in their huts three times every night, and the hour of muſter to be conſtantly changed: this had a good effect, but did not entirely prevent robberies from being committed.

On the 30th, ſome atrocious villain ſtabbed one of the hogs belonging to the crown, which occaſioned its death: this, amongſt many other actions which happened of a ſimilar nature, ſerved to ſhew that there are wretches equal to any act of inhumanity and barbarity.

The ſugar-cane, which I planted ſoon after my arrival on the iſland, being in a very expoſed ſituation, I removed it on the 31ſt, and planted out 106 very good joints, which were produced from only four canes. The Indian corn, that had been damaged by the hurricane, was reaped this afternoon.

On the 2d of April, three quarters of an acre of ground was ſown with wheat, the produce of that ground which had been firſt cleared on the north ſide of Mount George. The ſeaſon for ſowing wheat was as yet rather early, but I did it to try different periods, and to ſee which would anſwer beſt.

On the 5th (Sunday) after divine ſervice, Thomas Jones, a convict, acquainted me that the term of his tranſportation expired that day. I had been informed by Governor Phillip, that the different terms for which the convicts were ſentenced was not known, as the maſters of the tranſports had left the papers neceſſary for that information with their owners; but that he had wrote to England for them, and until their arrival no ſteps could be taken, as the convicts words were not ſufficient: I therefore informed Thomas Jones, that he was at liberty to work for whom he pleaſed, and if he choſe to work for the public good, he would be uſed the ſame as others were, until I received further orders concerning him.

An acre of ground, in Arthur's Vale, was ſown with wheat on the 6th.

On the 13th, three acres of wheat were ſown with four buſhels of ſeed. Every garden vegetable, now growing, were much blighted by weſt and ſouth-weſt winds; indeed, this was a very improper time to ſow any garden ſeeds, it being the commencement of winter; but the potatoes I had by me grew out ſo very faſt, that I was obliged to

to ſow them all. I had found the laſt year that June and July were the beſt months for ſowing the general crop.

Three acres of wheat were ſown in Arthur's Vale on the 16th of April, and by the 21ſt, eight acres of wheat were up, and had a promiſing appearance.

I obſerved on the 7th of May, that all the wheat, which hitherto had a very fine appearance, was blighted in many places, and particularly where it was thinneſt ſown: on examining it, I found it entirely covered with a ſmall black caterpillar, which had eat off the ſtems within an inch of the ground: theſe deſtructive vermin kept on the wheat during the whole month; they began on the lower part of the eight acres that were ſown in Arthur's Vale, and proceeded regularly through it, deſtroying every blade. We tried various methods to extirpate them, ſuch as rolling the wheat with a heavy roller, and beating it with turf-beaters, in order to kill them, but with little effect; for in an hour's time they were as numerous as ever, and daily increaſed in ſize. I found they were bred from a ſmall moth, vaſt numbers of which infeſted the air in the mornings and evenings: the

number of theſe caterpillars on the wheat was incredible; and they were ſo thick in the gardens that we ſwept them in heaps: the adjoining rivulet was alſo covered with them. The whole wheat of eight acres (which was a foot high when theſe pernicious vermin firſt attacked it) was eat cloſe to the ground by the 28th, and three acres of it never grew afterwards. Having gone through the gardens and wheat, theſe deſtructive inſects left us on the 29th.

The carpenters had now finiſhed the new ſtore-houſe: its dimenſions were thirty feet long by eighteen feet wide, and ten feet under the eaves: the ſides were covered with weather-boarding, and the roof was ſhingled. I ordered the proviſions to be brought from my houſe and the ſurgeon's, and depoſited in the new ſtore-houſe: the ſtores were alſo removed, and lodged there.

The 4th of June, being the anniverſary of his Majeſty's birth-day, it was obſerved as a holiday. The colours were hoiſted at ſunriſe: at noon, the marines and free people drew up under arms, to the right and left of the two three-pounders which were on the parade, in front of my houſe. The male con-

convicts were alſo drawn up on the right, and the females on the left. Three rounds of the guns and muſquetry were fired; after which, the whole party gave three cheers, and were diſmiſſed. In conſideration of the behaviour of the convicts on the day when the hurricane happened, and their general conduct ſince the diſcovery of the plot, I was induced to let them partake of the general feſtivity of the day; and ordered half a pint of rum for each man, and a pint of wine for each woman, for them to drink his Majeſty's health: the officers dined at my table, and on our drinking the King's health after dinner, three rounds of the great guns were fired: in the evening bonfires were lighted up, and the front windows of my houſe were illuminated with the initials G. R. When every perſon was aſſembled, and before the firing began, I ordered the priſoner, Thomas Watſon, who was in confinement for a theft, (and whom I propoſed ſending to Port-Jackſon to be tried) to be brought out, and in conſideration of the day I forgave him. The remaining four acres of wheat, which the caterpillars had not totally deſtroyed, were

now ſhot out again, and had a very promiſing appearance.

On the 11th, I drilled thirty pints of wheat into ſixty roods of ground; and, as I had but little ſeed left, this was, in my own opinion, diſpoſing of it to the beſt advantage; eſpecially as it was probable that the increaſe would be equal to that which had been ſown at a broad caſt: I alſo drilled in eighteen pints of marrow-fat peas.

At day-light in the morning of the 13th, we perceived the Supply in the road: at three o'clock in the afternoon I received my letters from Governor Phillip, who informed me, that he had ſent Lieutenant John Creſſwell, of the marines, with fourteen privates, to the iſland; that Mr. Creſſwell was to put himſelf under my command; and that in caſe of my death or abſence, the government of the iſland was to devolve on him. I had alſo the pleaſing ſatisfaction to find that my conduct was approved of by Governor Phillip.

Lieutenant Creſſwell landed with his detachment and part of their baggage, in the afternoon of the 14th, but nothing elſe could be received on ſhore until the 17th, when part of the proviſions and ſtores were landed.

As

As another boat was now become neceſſary for the uſe of the ſettlement, I wrote to Lieutenant Ball, requeſting him to ſend his carpenter on ſhore to build a coble, that being the moſt convenient ſort of boat for going out and coming into this place. The carpenter landed in the afternoon, and immediately got to work in building a boat.

By the 30th of June the new boat was in great forwardneſs, and my own workmen being able to finiſh it, I ſent the carpenter of the Supply on board; and at four in the afternoon that veſſel made ſail for Port-Jackſon.

On the 1ſt of July, the new coble was finiſhed, and her bottom payed: her dimenſions were twenty-two feet long, by ſix feet ſix inches wide. This buſineſs being compleated, the ſawyers and carpenters began to erect a houſe for Lieutenant Creſſwell, of eighteen feet long, by twelve feet wide, with a back part nine feet ſquare. Eleven acres of wheat were now up in Arthur's Vale, and had a very promiſing appearance: every vegetable in the gardens were alſo in a thriving ſtate.

Nothing material happened in the courſe of this month until the 28th, when a tree fell on John Bryant, a convict, which bruiſed his head ſo much that he died two hours afterwards. This man was one among the very few honeſt convicts which I had on the iſland.

The 12th of Auguſt, being the anniverſary of his Royal Highneſs the Prince of Wales's birth-day, the colours were hoiſted at ſun-riſe, and it was obſerved with the ſame ceremony as his Majeſty's birth-day, except giving liquor to the convicts, as their recent behaviour, with regard to theſts, had totally excluded them from that indulgence. As the wheat in Arthur's Vale grew very rank, I was adviſed to crop it, which was done on the 13th; however, I let three acres remain, in order to ſee which way it would be moſt productive.

The carpenters having finiſhed the ſhell of Lieutenant Creſſwell's houſe, I employed them in building an addition to the back part of my habitation, as I was apprehenſive of its being blown down by the violent ſouth-weſt winds, which were now almoſt conſtant. After divine ſervice on the 16th,

(Sunday)

(Sunday) the following orders were read for preſerving regularity and good order among the inhabitants of the iſland.

ORDERS.

I. All perſons on the iſland are regularly to attend muſter and divine ſervice, unleſs prevented by ſickneſs: a diſobedience of this order will be puniſhed by extra-work, or by ſtopping a day's proviſions for the firſt offence; which, if repeated, will be puniſhed by corporal chaſtiſement.

II. No perſons are to abſent themſelves from their quarters, either by night or day, except they have obtained leave, or are going to their reſpective work; and if any one is obſerved lurking about after the watch is ſet, he will be fired at by the centinel.

III. The working hours are to be regularly attended to, and all perſons abſent from their work after the drum beats for that purpoſe, will loſe a portion of the time they may ſave from their taſks; and in caſe of a ſecond offence, they will be ſeverely puniſhed.

IV. The taſks will be continued as uſual, and the time ſaved by the gangs is at their

own diſpoſal: thoſe who diſtinguiſh themſelves by employing their time in cultivating their gardens, and clearing ground for their own uſe, will meet with encouragement and reward.

V. If the overſeers, or the greateſt part of any gang, ſhould have reaſon to complain of the idleneſs of any one man belonging to that gang, and the complaint ſhould be found juſt, the offender will be ſeverely puniſhed.

VI. Thoſe who render themſelves unable to work by their neglect or obſtinacy, in not building themſelves warm huts, or who cut themſelves through careleſſneſs, will have a part of their proviſions ſtopped until they are able to go to work again.

VII. All the tools and utenſils are to be returned regularly every night to the ſtore-houſe when the retreat beats; and any perſon who is found ſecreting any tool, or any article of the King's ſtores, or committing any robbery whatever, will, on detection and conviction, receive ſuch puniſhment on the iſland as his Majeſty's juſtices of the peace may judge the offence deſerves; or the offender will be ſent to Port-Jackſon, to be

tried

tried by the criminal court, as the commandant may judge proper.

VIII. It is recommended to every one to be very careful of their cloathing, and every free perſon or convict is ſtrictly forbid buying or ſelling any article of ſlop clothing: thoſe who diſobey this order will be proſecuted for buying or ſelling the King's ſtores, whether free people or convicts.

IX. Whenever it may be neceſſary to make any complaint, the perſon making the complaint is to inform the corporal of the guard, who will immediately report it; when the commandant, (or, in his abſence, Lieutenant John Creſſwell,) will hear the complaint and decide upon it.

X. Diſobedience of orders, inſolence to officers or overſeers, or any other improper behaviour, tending to the diſturbance of the peace, or hindrance of the King's ſervice, will meet with ſevere puniſhment; and a regular, honeſt, good behaviour, will meet with encouragement and reward.

His Majeſty's juſtices of the peace of this iſland, viz. the Commandant and Lieutenant John Creſſwell, (on whom the government of the iſland devolves, in caſe of the commandant's

mandant's death or abſence) have appointed Roger Morley and John Altree, to hold the office of conſtables; and every perſon is ordered to be aſſiſting to either or both of them in the execution of their office. Such were the laws, which our then ſituations required.

On the 29th of Auguſt, Ann Coombs, a female convict, received fifty laſhes at the cart's tail, for defrauding Thomas Jones, of ſome proviſions: this puniſhment, however, did not deter her from committing crimes of a ſimilar nature; for the very next day ſhe was detected ſtealing two new check ſhirts from Francis Mew, a private marine, and was puniſhed with 100 laſhes.

Frequent notice has been taken of the deſtructive effects of the grub-worm, and they were now as troubleſome as ever. Theſe pernicious vermin are generated from the eggs of a fly, which are left on the leaves of plants: here they come to life, and daily gathering ſtrength and vigour, they deſtroy the leaves; and afterwards, falling on the ground, they cut off the roots and ſtalks. The ſurgeon, who, with great perſeverance and induſtry, had got a very good garden, and every thing in it in great forwardneſs, had all his plants

and

and vegetables nearly deſtroyed by the grub-worm, and moſt of the other gardens ſhared the ſame fate. The miſchief done at my garden in Arthur's Vale was not ſo great, which I attributed to the quantity of cultivated ground near it; and, probably, when more extenſive pieces of ground come to be cleared, the bad effects of the grub-worm will be in a great meaſure prevented; but at preſent, theſe deſtructive vermin, and the depredations of the convicts, rendered the cultivation of gardens very diſcouraging to individuals. The corporal of marines, who was a very induſtrious young man, had cleared and planted a piece of ground, and by attention and aſſiduity, had raiſed a quantity of vegetables, beſides a very fine crop of potatoes, which would have yielded him at leaſt five buſhels; but, on the evening of the 5th, between ſun-ſet and the time of the watch being ſet, ſome villains dug up every one of the potatoes, and deſtroyed a quantity of other vegetables; and although the convicts were muſtered in their huts at ſun-ſet, and three times more during the night, yet the theft was not diſcovered until the next morning, when a very ſtrict ſearch was made, in order

order to find out the offender, but to no purpoſe, as the potatoes were (in the cant phraſe) *all planted*; viz. buried in the ground, ſo as to be taken out as they were wanted. This was one of the many acts of villainy that were daily committed by theſe atrocious wretches.

On the 28th of September, the produce of 240 ſets of potatoes, which had been planted on three roods of ground the firſt of June, were dug up, and yielded five buſhels of very fine potatoes.

As it would be very convenient to have a path to the weſt ſide of the iſland, I employed ſix men to cut a road from the ſettlement to Mount Pitt, and from thence to Anſon-Bay, which buſineſs was completed on the 21ſt of October.

Fifteen acres of wheat were now in ear, and had a good appearance; and the Indian corn, of which we had ſeven acres, was in a thriving ſtate, although much thinned by the grub-worm: one acre of barley was alſo in ear, and the garden vegetables were in great forwardneſs. The grub-worm had totally diſappeared, but ſtill our calamities were not at an end; for the parroquets (of which we had myriads) were conſtantly deſtroying the wheat,

wheat, and the garden productions; inſomuch that we were obliged to keep a number of perſons employed in beating them away with long poles.

The carpenters finiſhed the barn on the 9th of November: its dimenſions were 30 feet long by 16 feet wide, and 17 feet under the eaves, with a loft over it. The roof was well ſhingled, and the ſides weather-boarded: in ſhort, it was a complete building, and conveniently ſituated, being in the center of the cultivated grounds in Arthur's Vale.

Robert Webb, a ſeaman belonging to the Sirius, went on the 15th, to the valley above the Caſcade-Bay; having obtained my permiſſion to become a ſettler, if Governor Phillip ſhould have no objection to it. Some barley which had been ſown the latter end of May, about three quarters of an acre with one buſhel and an half of ſeed, was cut this day, and the produce was twenty-three buſhels of very fine full grain. As it would be neceſſary to have the hogs and poultry near the granary, during the time of harveſt, I employed a party of labourers in bringing logs to make an incloſure round the barn, and other

other conveniencies for the ſtock; and on the 30th, we began the wheat harveſt.

On the 3d of December, at day-light, the Supply arrived in the road, and ſoon afterwards, I received my letters from Governor Phillip. In the courſe of the day, ſix men and eight women convicts were landed, with ſome proviſions and ſtores for the ſettlement. By an order from Governor Phillip, all perſons on the iſland were to be put to two-thirds allowance of proviſions, which commenced on the 5th. Having received every thing from the Supply, that veſſel ſailed for Port Jackſon on the 7th.

All the labourers were now employed in reaping, ſtacking, and thatching the wheat, which buſineſs was all finiſhed by the 24th of December. The wheat now reaped had been ſown at different periods, notwithſtanding which, it was ripe nearly at the ſame time; but the laſt ſown did not ſtack ſo well as that which was put more early in the ground: that which was ſown in drills, ſuffered much from the blighting winds; and, as this iſland is ſubject to theſe winds at all times of the year, the method of drilling wheat or barley in rows, will not anſwer ſo well

well as when ſown at a broad caſt. The beſt time for ſowing wheat, is from the latter end of May to the middle of June.

At ſun-riſe on the 25th, the colours were hoiſted, in obſervance of Chriſtmas-day; divine ſervice was performed at ten o'clock, and I ordered two hogs, belonging to the crown, to be killed and iſſued out to the free people and convicts, at the rate of one pound and an half to each perſon: and, as the crop of wheat had turned out tolerably well, I ordered two pounds of flour to each man, and the women one pound each, to celebrate the feſtival.

The ſmall union flag had hitherto been uſed as a ſignal for landing, but as it could not eaſily be diſtinguiſhed from the roads, on the 11th of January, 1790, I had a flag-ſtaff fixed in the front of my houſe, the lower maſt of which was 20 feet long, and the top-maſt 36 feet; on which a large union was occaſionally to be hoiſted. A greater number of people were ſick during this month, than had been the caſe ſince my landing on the iſland. The complaint, in general, was a diarrhœa, but thoſe who had this diſorder were ſoon recovered. The ſurgeon was of

opinion that the great change of weather which had happened, joined to the large quantity of vegetables that were daily conſumed, was the cauſe of this ſickneſs.

The appearance of a veſſel in the road at day-light in the morning of the 29th, cauſed the greateſt acclamations of joy through the whole ſettlement, every perſon imagining that ſhips had arrived from England; eſpecially as the Supply had been with us ſo recently: but, preſently afterwards, we perceived it to be that veſſel; and on receiving my letters from the governor, I found that no ſhips had arrived from our native country; which piece of intelligence being circulated through the ſettlement, a dejection took place equal to the joy that was viſible a ſhort time before. Twenty-two male convicts and one female arrived by the Supply, but no proviſions were ſent along with them, there being only a ſufficient quantity at Port Jackſon to ſerve until the latter end of May, at the preſent allowance; and as our crops had been good, and our reſources, with reſpect to fiſh and vegetables, were greater than at Port Jackſon, the governor had thought proper to ſend this additional number of convicts.

Our

Our preſent numbers were now as follow, viz.

Civil and military,	-	32
Male convicts,	-	79
Female convicts,	-	33
Children, -	-	5
Total	-	149

Having received all the convicts from the Supply, and ſent my letters for Governor Phillip on board, ſhe ſet ſail for Port Jackſon on the 2d of February.

Thoſe few amongſt the convicts who had been induſtrious, were now rewarded for it, as ſome had raiſed from one thouſand to fifteen hundred cobs of Indian corn; which, together with the fiſh that was procured from time to time, was of great ſervice to them now that their allowance of ſalt proviſions was reduced.

Richard Phillimore, a convict, had informed me that the term of his tranſportation expired on the 16th of January; and having taken the oath adminiſtered on that occaſion, he ſignified a wiſh of becoming a ſettler: as he was a ſober, induſtrious man, I gave him time to conſider of it, and to look out for

a ſituation where he would like to ſettle at: he informed me on the 22d of February, that he ſtill was deſirous of fixing on the iſland, and had found a ſpot where he wiſhed to reſide; on which, I ſent ſome labourers to build him an houſe, and to clear away a little ground for a commencement; I alſo gave him a ſow with young, and ſome poultry, and he was fully of opinion, that in one year, or two at fartheſt, he ſhould be able to ſupport himſelf, without any aſſiſtance from the ſettlement.

CHAPTER XIII.

The arrival of the Sirius and Supply at Norfolk-Iſland.—The loſs of the Sirius.—Captain Hunter and the crew ſaved.—Martial-Law proclaimed.—Lieutenant-Governor Roſs takes the command.—Lieutenant King leaves Norfolk-Iſland.—Deſcription of Norfolk-Iſland.—Face of the country.—Water—Soil—Climate—Timber—Fiſh—Seaſons—Winds—Coaſt, and Bays.—Preſent ſtate of cultivation.

tion.—Number of inhabitants on the iſland.—Grain and live-ſtock.—Lieutenant King arrives at Port Jackſon.—Finds the country greatly improved.

AT the break of day on the 13th of March, I was alarmed with a tumultuous noiſe of huzzaing and rejoicing; on enquiry into the cauſe, I found that two veſſels were ſeen in the offing. Every one of us were now fully perſuaded that the long looked for and much expected relief was at length arrived, and we began to felicitate each other that the time was now come, when we ſhould hear news from England: ſome of us anticipated pleaſing and unpleaſing accounts from our friends in the northern hemiſphere, as we had been near three years abſent, without having received the leaſt intelligence from our relatives, or native country.

As the wind blew ſtrong at ſouth-weſt, and a great ſea was running in the bay; the veſſels, (which we found were the Sirius and Supply,) bore up for Ball-Bay, to which place I went, and received from Lieutenant Ball my letters from Governor Phillip. Our expectations were once more blaſted, for, inſtead of thoſe

pleaſing hopes being realized, which the appearance of the veſſels had created in the morning, we were informed that no relief had arrived, nor had any intelligence been received from England. I found by the governor's letter, that he had ſent Lieutenant-Governor Roſs in the Sirius, to take the command at Norfolk-Iſland, as the ſervice rendered it neceſſary for my returning to England, in order to give ſuch information to his Majeſty's miniſters, reſpecting the ſettlement I had eſtabliſhed, as could not be conveyed by letter. I was alſo directed to embark on board the Sirius, whoſe commander had orders to receive me on board, with all ſuch petty officers, ſeamen, and marines belonging to that ſhip, who were not deſirous of becoming ſettlers; directions having been given the Lieutenant Governor to that effect. Lieutenant-Governor Roſs brought with him, one captain, five ſubalterns, a number of non-commiſſioned officers and privates, with the colours: alſo a number of male and female convicts, and children; with their proportion of cloaths, proviſions, and ſtores. The two veſſels went round to Caſcade-Bay, where part of the detachment of marines and ſome

of

of the convicts were landed; and the next forenoon, the remainder of the marines and convicts, with a great part of their baggage, were landed, and they marched to the ſettlement. The Lieutenant-Governor arrived at the ſettlement at noon.

On the 15th, the remains of the proviſions and other ſtores on the iſland were ſurveyed by Captain Johnſton and Lieutenants Creſſwell and Clark: after which, I got the receipts from Mr. Roger Morley, to whom I had given an order to act as ſtore-keeper, with the approbation of Governor Phillip. At one o'clock in the afternoon of the 17th, the Supply came into the road, and landed a quantity of luggage, ſome ſtock, and thirteen caſks of proviſions. No landing could be attempted on the 18th, the wind blowing very ſtrong; but on the 19th, it grew more moderate; ſo that at day-light, the Supply came into the road, and the Sirius was at ſome diſtance to the ſouthward, ſtanding in for the iſland. There being very fine landing, I made the ſignal that large boats could land ſafely, and by ten o'clock every thing was received from the Supply: ſoon afterwards, the Sirius hove to, in order to hoiſt her boats

out, which, being accompliſhed, ſhe made ſail; but the tide of flood ſtill ran very ſtrong, and ſhe could not weather the outer rock of the reef, which runs off Point Roſs: after an unſucceſsful attempt to ſtay, ſhe wore and came to the wind on the ſtarboard tack: unfortunately, the wind ſhifted to the ſouth-eaſt, and the ſtrong hold which the tide had on the ſhip, forced her near the iſland, and ſhe got to the back of the reef: ſhe was now hove in ſtays, but having freſh ſtern way, ſhe tailed on the reef and ſtruck. A hawſer was got from the ſhip as ſoon as poſſible, one end of which was faſtened to a tree on ſhore, and by this means Captain Hunter and moſt of the ſailors were on ſhore by the time it grew dark.

The inſtant the ſhip ſtruck, Lieutenant-Governor Roſs ordered the drums to aſſemble all the marines and convicts: martial law was then proclaimed, and the people were told if any one killed any animal or fowl, or committed any robbery whatever, they would be inſtantly made a ſevere example of. The officers and marines were ordered to wear their ſide-arms: guards were ſet over the barn and ſtore-houſes, and ſome other neceſſary

ceſſary regulations were ordered by the Lieutenant-Governor.

On the 20th of March, we had very ſtrong gales of wind, and a great ſurf running; however, by four o'clock, every perſon were got out of the wreck without any other accident than receiving a few bruiſes.

On the 23d, the landing was good early in the morning, and the large coble was ſent on board the Supply, (which was in the road) with ſome of my baggage, and the officers and men belonging to the Sirius, who were going to Port Jackſon.

The weather being moderate and pleaſant in the morning of the 24th, I went on board the Supply, along with Lieutenants Waterhouſe and Fowell, and twenty-two of the crew belonging to the late Sirius; and at noon, we made ſail for Port Jackſon.

As I have now taken leave of this iſland, I ſhall add a few general obſervations on it; and although ſeveral of them may probably have been made before, in the courſe of this journal, yet it perhaps may not be amiſs to collect them together in one point of view.

NORFOLK ISLAND.

The form of the iſland is a long ſquare, and it contains about fourteen thouſand acres: it is ſix miles in length and four in breadth.

Face of the Country.—The iſland is very hilly, and ſome of the valleys are tolerably large, conſidering the ſize of the iſland; but moſt of them are only deep hollows, formed by the ſteep hills on each ſide, ſome of which riſe ſo perpendicular that they cannot be cultivated. There are ſome extenſive plains on the ſummits of the hills. Mount Pitt is the only remarkable hill on the iſland, and is about two hundred fathoms high. The cliffs round the iſland are about forty fathoms high, and are quite perpendicular: the baſis of them, as well as moſt of the rocks and reefs round the iſland, is a hard, firm clay, of a very fine texture. The whole iſland is covered with a very thick foreſt, choaked up with underwood, which makes it impaſſable until it is cleared away.

Water.—The iſland is well ſupplied with many ſtreams of very fine water, ſome of which are ſufficiently large to turn a number of

of mills: it is probable that moſt of theſe rivulets originate from ſprings near Mount Pitt. On a hill, near the middle of the iſland, between Caſcade and Sydney bays, there is a pond of freſh water, about half an acre: there is no rivulet near it, nor can any ſpring be perceived, yet, in the greateſt drought, it conſtantly remains full, and has a very good taſte. All theſe ſtreams abound with very fine eels.

Soil.—From the ſides of the cliffs which ſurround the coaſt, to the ſummit of Mount Pitt, there is a continuation of the fineſt ſoil, varying from a rich brown mould to a light red earth. Some large ſtones are found on different parts of the iſland.

Air.—As a proof of the ſalubrity and wholeſomeneſs of the air, it is to be remarked, that there had been ſcarcely any ſickneſs ſince I landed, nor had we any illneſs whatever, except a few colds.

Timber and trees.—There are only five ſorts of trees on the iſland which can be called timber; viz. the pine, a wood reſembling the live oak; a yellow wood; a hard black wood; and a wood reſembling the Engliſh beech. The pine-trees are of a great ſize, many of them being from one hundred and eighty to two hundred and twenty

twenty feet high, and from four to eight feet diameter ſome diſtance from the ground. Thoſe trees, which meaſure from one hundred to one hundred and eighty feet high are in general ſound, and are without branches for eighty or ninety feet, but the upper part is too knotty and hard to be uſeful; indeed, it frequently happens, that after twenty feet have been cut off from the butt, the trees become rotten and ſhaky, and is alſo very brittle; for which reaſon, no dependance can be put on them for maſts or yards. The turpentine which exudes freely from the bark, is of a milk-white glutinous ſubſtance; but it is rather remarkable, that there is none in the timber. We tried to render this turpentine uſeful in paying boats, and other purpoſes, but without ſucceſs; as it would neither melt nor burn: we alſo tried to make pitch or tar, by burning the old pines; but there being no turpentine in the wood, our efforts were uſeleſs. The pine is very uſeful in buildings, and being diſperſed in various parts of the iſland, is well calculated for ſuch buildings as hereafter may be neceſſary: from what I have been able to obſerve, it is very durable, as that which we had uſed for erecting

ing houſes, ſtood the weather very well. The live-oak, yellow-wood, black-wood, and beech, are all of a cloſe grain, and durable; in general they are from fourteen to twenty inches diameter. The branches of the live oak are fit for timbers and knees of boats or ſmall veſſels. There are a variety of other ſmall trees on the iſland, but as they are not uſeful, it is unneceſſary to enumerate them here.

Fiſh.—The coaſts of the iſland abound with very fine fiſh, which are principally the ſnapper, and weigh from four to eight pounds each.

Seaſons.—The ſpring is very viſible in Auguſt, but the trees on many parts of the iſland are in a conſtant ſucceſſion of flowering and ſeeding the whole year round. The ſummer is very hot: I had no thermometer to determine the degree of heat, but it is exceſſive. From the 23d of September, 1789, to the 22d of February, 1790, not one drop of rain fell, excepting on two days in December; but it ſhould be remarked, that we had no drought in the former year. All the grain, and the European plants, ſeeded in December. From February to Auguſt may be

be called the rainy ſeaſon; not that I think there is any regular time of rains during theſe months, as the weather is ſometimes very fine for a fortnight together; but when the rain does fall, it pours in torrents. I do not recollect more than three claps of thunder, or lightning, during the time I remained on the iſland. The winter, (which may be ſaid to commence in April, and end in July,) is very pleaſant; there is never any froſt; but when the ſouth-weſt winds blow, which are very frequent and violent in theſe months, the air is raw and cold. It is very remarkable, that during ſome days in December and January, the weather has been much colder than in the winter months. The ſouth-eaſt, and eaſt winds are, very parching and dry, as no dew falls when thoſe winds prevail.

Winds.—During the winter months, the wind is moſtly from ſouth to weſt, blowing with great violence for a week together; afterwards it veers round to the ſouthward and ſouth-eaſt, which brings fine weather for a few days, then it veers to eaſt, north-eaſt, and north-weſt, blowing in heavy gales, and generally accompanied with violent torrents of rain: after which it ſhifts to ſouth-weſt:

indeed,

indeed, I do not remember one inſtance of the wind coming to the north-eaſt, round by weſt. The ſouth-eaſt wind blows during the ſummer with very little variation, and ſometimes very ſtrong.

Coaſts of the iſland.—The coaſts of the iſland are in general ſteep to, and (excepting Sydney, Anſon, Ball, and Caſcade Bays,) are inacceſſible; being ſurrounded by ſteep cliffs, which riſe perpendicularly from the ſea. A number of large rocks lie ſcattered about cloſe to the ſhore, on which a continual ſurf breaks with great force.

Preſent ſtate of cultivation.—The proper time for ſowing wheat or barley is from May to Auguſt: that which is ſown in ſheltered ſituations, ſhould be ſown in May, June, and July: and that which is ſown in places that are expoſed to the ſea-winds on the ſouth ſide of the iſland, ſhould not be ſown before July; and if ſo late as Auguſt, it would yield well. The wheat, which has been ſown, produced more than twenty fold; and, I think in future, will yield a ſtill greater increaſe. We have found a buſhel and an half of ſeed ſufficient for an acre of ground newly broke up. Indian corn ſhould be planted from

from June until Auguſt, in places not much expoſed to the ſea winds: it yields well, and is in my opinion the beſt grain to cultivate, on account of the little trouble attending its growth, and the manufacturing it for food.

The ſugar-cane grows very ſtrong, and I think will come to perfection; although it ſuffers much from the blighting winds, and the grub-worm. Vines, orange, and lemon-trees, are in a very thriving ſtate: the banana-trees found growing on the iſland, will, I make no doubt, thrive very well, when thoſe which have been planted out from the old trees come to perfection; indeed ſome of them have already yielded good fruit. That uſeful article of food, the potatoe, thrives amazingly, and two crops a year may be obtained with eaſe: I have ſeen 120 potatoes at one root, 80 of which were larger than an hen's egg. Every kind of garden vegetable (which the grub ſpares,) grows well and comes to great perfection: cabbages weigh from ten to twenty-ſeven pounds each: melons and pumpkins alſo grow very fine. I think ſituations might be found on the iſland, where cotton and indigo will thrive: of the latter, there are two trees, both which are very

very large and fine, but the ant deſtroys the bloſſom as faſt as it flowers. Rice has been ſown twice, viz. once each year, but the ſouth-eaſt winds blighted a great part of it: that which eſcaped the blight, yielded a great increaſe. The quantity of ground cleared and in cultivation on the 13th of March, 1790, was thirty acres belonging to the crown, and about eighteen acres cleared by free people and convicts, for their gardens.

Reſpecting the flax, although we made repeated trials, yet, having no perſon converſant in the preparation of it, I found it could not at preſent be brought to an uſeful ſtate: but I may venture to ſay, that if proper flax-dreſſers could be ſent to New Zealand, to obſerve their method of manufacturing it, they might render it a valuable commodity, both to furniſh the inhabitants with cloathing, and for other purpoſes.

I apprehend, from the goodneſs of the ſoil, that Norfolk-Iſland is very capable of maintaining at leaſt one hundred families, allowing to each an hundred acres of ground, and reſerving two thouſand acres for fuel: with induſtry, they would have, in a ſhort time, all the neceſſaries of life, except cloathing, and that

that muſt depend on the flax of the iſland, or the growth of European flax.

The want of a ſafe harbour for veſſels to lie in, is a very great inconvenience, and renders it difficult to have acceſs to the iſland; indeed, veſſels may load and unload, by going to the lee-ſide, and embracing other favourable opportunities, but unfortunately the vaſt quantity of coral rocks which cover the bottom, render anchorage very unſafe: however, ſhould the ſettlement at Port-Jackſon be continued, in the courſe of a few years theſe difficulties will ſcarcely be thought on, when compared with the advantages ariſing from the quantity of grain that there is every reaſon to ſuppoſe may be drawn from this iſland, for the ſupport of the inhabitants of New South-Wales.

When I firſt landed on the iſland, the convicts were kept at day-work, having ſtated times for their dinners and other meals: this method anſwered very well whilſt there were few to look after; but when their numbers increaſed, I had not people of confidence to overlook them and keep them at work: I therefore judged it would be more eligible to taſk them, taking the opinion of thoſe whom I thought

I thought moſt converſant in the different kinds of work that were going forward.

The numbers of inhabitants I left on Norfolk Iſland were as follow:

Civil, military, and free -	90
Belonging to the Sirius -	80
Male convicts - -	191
Female convicts - -	100
Children - - -	37
Total	498

The quantities of grain, potatoes, and live ſtock I left were as follow:

Wheat -	from 250 to 300 buſhels.
Barley - -	6 buſhels.
Indian corn -	130 to 140 buſhels.

Potatoes, one acre would be ready to dig in May.

Hogs, large and ſmall, belonging to the public, 26, beſides 18 hogs, a quantity of poultry, three goats, and one ewe, my property; and ſome ſtock belonging to individuals.

Before I take my final leave of this iſland, (where I remained two years) I cannot help acknowledging the great aſſiſtance I have received from the few officers I had with me;

nor was this propriety of conduct confined to the officers alone, as all the marines and other free people were ſteady and regular in their behaviour; and it gives me a ſenſible ſatisfaction to remark, that, excepting on one or two occaſions, I never had any reaſon to be diſſatisfied with any of the few free perſons I had under my command. Excluſive of this general approbation of the good conduct of the free people, I muſt particulariſe Mr. Creſſwell, the officer of marines; Mr. Stephen Dunnavan, midſhipman; and Mr. Thomas Jamieſon, ſurgeon's mate of the Sirius; I feel the greateſt ſatisfaction in ſaying, that a conſtant, uniform propriety of conduct, and a readineſs in forwarding the ſervice, were ever zealouſly ſhewn by theſe gentlemen.

At noon on the 24th, the Supply made ſail, and we arrived at Port Jackſon on the 4th of April.

When I left Port Jackſon in February, 1788, the ground about Sydney Cove was covered with a thick foreſt, but on my arrival at this time, I found it cleared to a conſiderable diſtance, and ſome good buildings were erected. The Governor, the Lieutenant-Governor, the Judge-Advocate, and

the greateſt part of the civil and military officers were comfortably lodged. The Governor's houſe is built of ſtone, and has a very good appearance, being ſeventy feet in front. The Lieutenant-Governor's houſe is built of brick, as are alſo thoſe belonging to the Judge and the Commiſſary: the reſt of the houſes are built with logs and plaiſtered: and all the roofs are either covered with ſhingles or thatched. The hoſpital is a good temporary building: the ſoldiers were in barracks, and the officers had comfortable huts, with gardens adjoining to them; but unfortunately, theſe gardens afford but little, as there is not more than two feet of ſoil over a bed of rocks, and this ſoil is little better than black ſand; and to this inconvenience muſt be added, the depredations of rats and thieves. At the diſtance of an hour's walk from Sydney-Cove, the ſoil is better in ſome places, and theſe are occupied by the officers and others, as their farms: there are alſo brick-kilns and a pottery, both which articles they make very well, but a great inconvenience ariſes in their not being able to glaze the earthen-ware.

The natives ſing an hymn or ſong of joy, from day-break until ſun-riſe. They procure fire with infinite labour, by fixing the pointed end of a round piece of ſtick into a hole made in a flat piece of wood, and twirling it round ſwiftly betwixt both hands, ſliding them at the ſame time upwards and downwards until the operator is fatigued, when he is relieved by ſome of his companions, who are all ſeated in a circle for that purpoſe, and each takes his turn in the operation until fire is procured: this being the proceſs, it is no wonder that they are never ſeen without a piece of lighted wood in their hand.

CHAPTER XIV.

Lieutenant King ſails for Batavia.—Diſcovers Tench's-Iſland.—A deſcription of the inhabitants.—Prince William-Henry's-Iſland deſcribed.—Touches at Kercolang.—A deſcription of the inhabitants, their cloathing and utenſils.—Arrival at Batavia.—Interview with the governor.—Departure from Batavia.

Batavia.—Mortality amongſt the ſailors.—Arrival at the Iſle of France.—An account of that iſland.—Sails from the Iſle of France.—Arrival in the Engliſh Channel.

HAVING received the diſpatches for his Majeſty's principal Secretary of State, and for the Secretary of the Admiralty, from Governor Phillip, together with his order for me to go on board the Supply, and to proceed in her to Batavia, and from thence, to make the beſt of my way to England, with the above diſpatches, and Lieutenant Ball having alſo received his orders, I took my leave of the Governor, and at noon, on the 17th of April, 1790, we ſet ſail; carrying with us the fervent prayers of thoſe we left behind, for our ſafety. Lieutenant Ball was directed to call at Norfolk-Iſland, if it did not occaſion him too much loſs of time; but, as the winds ſeemed to hang to the eaſtward, there was every probability of loſing at leaſt a fortnight; and, as the Supply did not carry any thing which could be of the leaſt aſſiſtance to thoſe on the iſland, he thought proper to proceed on the voyage. At one o'clock on the 28th, we perceived a great alteration

in the ſea, which was become ſo ſmooth, that at four o'clock it was, comparatively ſpeaking, ſmooth water: at half paſt five, the man who was ſtationed at the maſt-head, ſaw breakers in the ſouth-eaſt, which were found to be a ſhoal, bearing from ſouth-eaſt by eaſt to eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, about ſeven miles diſtant: it appeared to trend ſouth-ſouth-eaſt and north-north-weſt; and the north end ſeemed to break off ſuddenly in a ſmall bluff.

The man at the maſt-head had ſeen this ſhoal a conſiderable time before he ſpoke of it, and, when aſked why he did not mention it ſooner, he ſaid that he took it for the reflection of the ſetting ſun; forgetting that the ſun, if it had been viſible, ſet to the weſtward: this circumſtance occaſioned Lieutenant Ball to name it "*Booby-ſhoal:*" its latitude is 21° 24′ ſouth, and the longitude 159° 24′ eaſt of Greenwich.

On the 5th of May in the morning, high land was ſeen, bearing from north-north-weſt, to weſt-north-weſt, ſeven or eight leagues diſtant; it ſeemed to trend about north-north-eaſt, and ſouth-ſouth-weſt. The next afternoon we perceived the northernmoſt land to be two ſmall iſlands, which appeared

to

to trend north-north-eaſt and ſouth-ſouth-weſt; the main land lying a little to the weſtward of them. The eaſternmoſt of theſe two iſlands Liutenant Ball named Sirius's-Iſland; it is ſituated in 10° 52′ ſouth latitude, and 162° 30′ eaſt longitude: the other was named Maſſey's-Iſland. It is unfortunate that the changeable ſtate of the wind and weather did not permit us to range this coaſt, by hauling in with the land, as ſomething might have probably been diſcovered, without occaſioning any loſs of time.

At ten o'clock in the morning of the 19th, we ſaw an iſland bearing weſt by north ſix or ſeven leagues diſtant: the latitude at noon, was 1° 44′ ſouth, and the longitude 150° 39′ eaſt. With a fine breeze at eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, we ſteered for the iſland, as it lay directly in our courſe, and ſoon perceived that it was inhabited, as we ſaw a number of people ſtanding on the ſouth point, and a great many canoes were coming off to meet us; but as the veſſel approached them they paddled towards the ſhore; yet they ſeemed deſirous to have ſome communication with us, and the veſſel being hove to, in a ſhort time they came near us, but no invitation or intreaty

could prevail on them to come along-ſide: at length, two of the canoes, which had ſeven men in each, and two others with two men each, came cloſe under the ſtern, but none of them would venture on board, and it was with great difficulty they were perſuaded to come near enough to receive a ſtring of beads which were let down over the ſtern; after this, they all paddled on ſhore. During the time theſe canoes were near the veſſel, the beach on the iſland was covered with natives; and on the ſouth point of the iſland, a man ſtood alone, with a long pole in his hand, which had ſomething large at the end of it, and which he ſeemed to uſe as a ſignal to thoſe in the canoes. Theſe canoes appeared to be made out of a large tree, and were well ſhaped, with a hook made of wood at each end, the uſe of which we could not poſſibly gueſs: the largeſt of them appeared to be about 28 feet long. Each canoe had a long out-rigger, to prevent them from overſetting.

The natives who were in the canoes, were the ſtouteſt and healthieſt looking men I ever beheld; their ſkin was perfectly ſmooth and free from any diſorder: they were quite naked, and of a copper colour; their hair reſembled

ſembled that of the New-Hollanders. Some of their beards reached as low as the navel, and there was an appearance of much art being uſed in forming them into long ringlets; ſo that it ſhould ſeem as if the prevailing faſhion on this iſland was that of keeping the beard well combed, curled, and oiled. Two or three of the men had ſomething like a bead or bone ſuſpended to a ſtring, which was faſtened round the neck. The ſize and very healthy appearance of theſe people excited our admiration very much; indeed it is wonderful how ſo ſmall a ſpot of ground can ſupport the vaſt number of inhabitants we ſaw on the iſland, all of whom appeared equally ſtrong and handſome as thoſe who were in the canoes. The iſland cannot be more than two miles in circumference: it is low, but entirely covered with trees, many of which are the cocoa-nut; we likewiſe ſaw a number of large trees which bore a very fine red bloſſom, but the red was ſo very conſpicuous, that I am inclined to think the leaves were of that colour. Theſe trees reached to the margin of a very fine ſandy beach, which entirely ſurrounds the iſland; a great number of canoes were lying on the beach, and, from the

the number of natives we ſaw there, beſides what were in the canoes, there cannot be leſs than a thouſand inhabitants on the iſland. Lieutenant Ball named this place *Tench's Iſland*, after Captain Watkin Tench of the marines: it is ſituated in 1° 39′ ſouth latitude, and 150° 31′ eaſt longitude. After lying-to near an hour, and finding we could have no farther intercourſe with the natives, without conſiderable loſs of time, we bore up and kept on our courſe, ſteering weſt by north. At ſun-ſet, we ſaw another iſland bearing weſt by north, Tench's-Iſland bearing eaſt half north. The next morning at day-light, the iſland ſeen the preceding evening, bore from ſouth by weſt, to weſt by ſouth, about three leagues diſtant; on this, we altered our courſe, in order to run along the ſhore. This iſland is pretty high, and appears to be about 70 miles in circumference. It is well wooded, and there were a number of clear cultivated tracts of ground, on which ſomething was growing that had the appearance of Indian corn, or ſugar-cane. As we ran along ſhore, we could not perceive any place of ſhelter for a veſſel on the eaſt ſide of the iſland, but there probably is on

ſome

ſome part of it. The iſland is ſurrounded by a ſandy beach, on which the ſurf beats with ſome violence: a number of canoes were lying on the beach, and ſome parts of the ſhore were covered with the natives; but none of them attempted to come off, although the veſſel was not more than a mile and a half from the ſhore. We ſaw ſeveral houſes amongſt the trees, which appeared to be large and well conſtructed. This iſland has a luxuriant and pictureſque appearance, and there can ſcarcely be a doubt but it is very fertile and well peopled. The natives were quite naked, and ſeemed to be the ſame ſort of people we had ſeen at Tench's Iſland; and their canoes were apparently of the ſame conſtruction. At ten o'clock in the fore-noon, being abreaſt of the ſouth-eaſt point of the iſland, we bore up and made ſail, ſteering weſt-north-weſt. Lieutenant Ball requeſting me to name this iſland, I called it *Prince William Henry Iſland*, in honour of his Royal Highneſs the Duke of Clarence.

We had now a vaſt number of tropic birds and ganets round the veſſel: the ſea was covered with trees of the largeſt ſize, which had both roots and branches to them; there

were

were alſo cocoa-nut trees, ſugar-cane, bamboo, and a variety of other drift wood: many of the trees were ſo large, that we could plainly ſee them at the diſtance of two leagues: moſt of the roots lay to the weſt-north-weſt, from which circumſtance, and the veſſel being conſiderably to the weſtward of account by the time-keeper, we were induced to ſuppoſe that a ſtrong current ſet in that direction.

At day-light on the 5th of June, we ſaw an iſland bearing north-weſt, which is called *Kercolang* in the charts; being cloſe under the eaſt ſide of it, we ſaw a canoe with a matt ſail coming towards us: the natives ſoon came under the ſtern without any ſigns of fear. There were twelve Malays in this canoe, who were all cloathed: the outriggers of the canoe, which were long and ſlight, would not permit them to come alongſide, but a jacket and a hatchet being given them, and ſigns made for them to go on ſhore and bring ſomething to eat, they left the veſſel and went towards the ſhore, where we followed them. Before they landed, a ſtill larger canoe, with fifteen Malays in it, went to the canoe which had left us; and as we were not

more

more than two miles from the ſhore, Lieutenant Ball and myſelf went in the jolly-boat and joined the two canoes; on this, two of the Malays jumped out of the canoes into our boat, and went immediately to the oars. When we came near the beach, obſerving the ſurf to break on it, we made ſigns for the canoes to go on ſhore, and bring us ſome cocoa-nuts and plantains, as we ſaw vaſt quantities on the trees. They were very deſirous for our boat to land; but that not being agreed to, they left a native in the jolly-boat, and one of our men went on ſhore in the canoe: he ſoon returned with ſeveral canoes, which were laden with cocoa-nuts, yams, plantains, ſweet potatoes, rice, a little flour, and ſeveral other articles, all which we purchaſed for axes and other barter: ſoon afterwards we returned on board, and were followed by upwards of an hundred canoes. At noon, a breeze ſpringing up from the northward, we made ſail, and many of the canoes followed us to a conſiderable diſtance. This iſland is between eighty and one hundred miles in circumference, and is in general of a very good height: the face of the country ſeems to be ſteep hills and extenſive vallies,

and

and every part of it was covered with trees and verdure: there were alſo ſome cultivated grounds, which had a very pleaſant appearance. Theſe Malays wore no erid or creſs, nor did we ſee any offenſive weapons amongſt them, excepting two which were on the beach, who had ſomething like halberts in their hands, but whether they were of iron or wood we could not diſcern. The houſes ſtood on poſts; they appeared to be well built, and neatly thatched: their canoes were alſo neatly made, being hollowed out of trees, with bamboo outriggers on each ſide to prevent them from overſetting; a piece of wood is left at the ſtern, which projects like a proa, to break the water before it comes to the bow: each canoe has a maſt, on which they hoiſt a ſquare piece of matt as a ſail. Their fiſhing-hooks and lines are moſtly European, and it is poſſible that there is a Dutch reſident on the iſland, as we ſaw a ſmall Dutch flag placed before a houſe to the northward of the place where we went with the boat; though it is natural to ſuppoſe, that if any European had been there, he would have come to the boat, or that the natives would have made us underſtand there was one

on

on the iſland. The cloathing theſe people in general wore, was made of a coarſe kind of callico, though ſome of them wore ſilk, and moſt of them had ſomething reſembling a turban round their heads; a few, indeed, wore a Chineſe pointed hat. There can be no doubt but the Dutch ſupply theſe people with cloathing and other neceſſaries, which, of courſe, muſt be for ſome production of the iſland. I ſhewed one of the natives ſome cloves, and he gave me to underſtand that they had the ſame. I do not think the Dutch ſend very often to this iſland, from the extreme avidity the natives ſhewed in purchaſing our hatchets and cloathing: they are mild, and apparently a quiet people, and the confidence they placed in us was ſufficient to prove that ſtrangers were not unwelcome gueſts among them.

From the 6th to the 10th of June, we had freſh gales of wind at weſt, with very heavy ſqualls and much rain, which often obliged us to clew all up. During the laſt four days we only got eight leagues on our courſe, and there being every appearance of a continuation of weſterly winds, (this being the ſouth-weſt monſoon in the China ſeas) with heavy ſqualls

ſqualls, or rather tornados of wind and rain, which endangered the maſts: on the 10th, Lieutenant Ball relinquiſhed the purpoſe of going through the ſtreights of *Macaſſer*, and adopted that of making the paſſage between *Celebes* and *Gilolo*, through the *Moluccas* and the ſtreights of *Salayer*; accordingly, at ſix in the morning, we bore up for the ſouth point of *Lirog*, which lay ſouth-eaſt by eaſt twelve or fourteen leagues diſtant.

On the 17th we paſſed the iſland of Ternate; its latitude is 00° 50′ north, and the longitude 127° 4′ eaſt. A very pleaſant little iſland lies about two miles to the north-north-weſt of Ternate, which, in the charts, is called *Heri*; it is pretty high, and not more than two miles in circumference. The cultivated ſpots on this iſland, contraſted with the brown ſhade of the trees, and the interſperſed ſituation of the houſes, give this little ſpot a moſt pictureſque appearance: it appeared, as well as Ternate, to be in a perfect ſtate of cultivation; and from the number of houſes we ſaw, they muſt both be well inhabited. We ſaw a vaſt number of fires on Ternate, which probably were lighted for a ſignal. There are a number of other ſmall

iſlots,

iſlots, which form a conſiderable group, and they were all cultivated. A number of boats were paſſing from one iſlot to another, with ſome Europeans in them. The weather was exceſſive hot and ſultry; the thermometer, when in the open air and ſhade, being 91°.

In the afternoon of the 21ſt, the boat was hoiſted out in order to try the current, when it was found to ſet eaſt by ſouth, at the rate of a mile and an half an hour; however, the current among theſe iſlands is by no means certain, as we found, on the 22d, a ſtrong current or tide ſetting to the north-weſt. A great number of very large whales were ſeen, which moved exceeding ſlow, and came very near the veſſel.

Nothing material happened until half paſt three o'clock in the morning of the 5th of July, when we ſaw a ſmall iſland bearing weſt half ſouth, not more than a mile and a half from the veſſel; on this we hauled our wind to the ſouthward, and tacked occaſionally until day-light. This iſland is called in the charts *Pulo Packit:* it is very low and covered with trees. There are two iſlands laid down in Dunn's and Moore's charts, but we only ſaw one iſland, and a rocky reef: this iſland

is laid down in Dunn's chart in 6° 18′ ſouth, but its real latitude is 5° 50′ ſouth: this miſtake had very near proved fatal to the Supply, but it being a moon-light night, the danger was diſcovered, though at the diſtance of two miles only. In the afternoon of the 6th, we anchored in Batavia road. Upwards of thirty Dutch ſhips were lying there, beſides a number of ſnows and Chineſe junks.

The next morning, I waited on the general, at the requeſt of Lieutenant Ball, and ſettled the ſalute, which took place at five in the evening, when the Supply ſaluted the fort with nine guns, which were returned by an equal number.

On the 8th, Lieutenant Ball waited on the general, accompanied by the Shebander and myſelf. As the general could not ſpeak any other language than Dutch, and the Shebander could not ſpeak ſufficient Engliſh to explain himſelf, I was obliged to interpret between Lieutenant Ball and the latter; and I beg here to remark, that during this converſation which was in the general's office, we were not aſked to ſit down; indeed, had the general been polite enough to have made the offer, there was not a ſecond chair in the

the room; ſo unuſual a thing is it to be ſeated in the general's preſence, when talking to him on buſineſs.

After Lieutenant Ball had ſignified his buſineſs, and the ſervice he was ſent on, a number of frivolous enquiries were made reſpecting the ſettlement at New South Wales; and much aſtoniſhment was expreſſed, that we came from that country and could not tell *what became of the Bounty, Lieutenant Bligh's ſhip.*

No other anſwer could be got, than that the council were to be requeſted to permit Lieutenant Ball to purchaſe whatever he wanted, and to hire a veſſel to carry what he might want to Port Jackſon: this being ſettled we took our leave. The Shebander drew up a requeſt, which Lieutenant Ball ſigned, and the next day it was preſented to the council, (at which the director-general preſided, on account of the general's indiſpoſition) when every thing was granted; but they refuſed to interfere in taking up a veſſel, or in purchaſing proviſions, ſaying, that thoſe matters were to be managed by Lieutenant Ball. As every veſſel here either belonged to the company, or were too flimſy to go

on ſuch a voyage, it was for a ſhort time doubtful whether one could be procured: at length, the Shebander hearing that a ſnow of 250 tons or upwards lay at a port called *Samarre*, on the eaſt ſide of Java, he offered her to Lieutenant Ball; ſaying that he would purchaſe her and fit her out completely, if Mr. Ball would contract with him to pay eighty rix-dollars a ton for the voyage; the Shebander to take all riſks upon himſelf, with reſpect to the loſs of the veſſel. As the neceſſity for a ſupply of proviſions was very great, and as there was no other veſſel to be procured, Lieutenant Ball was obliged to make the agreement, and the ſnow was ſent for. Proviſions were eaſily purchaſed, and at a cheap rate: very excellent beef and pork at ſix-pence per pound. Of flour, there was little to be procured, as the people here eat rice, Europeans as well as natives.

During my ſtay at Batavia, I lived at the hotel, which was the governor-general's houſe at the time Captain Cook was here: it is a large and ſpacious building, divided into two parts, one of which is occupied by ſtrangers, and the other by Dutch. Every perſon, who is a ſtranger, is obliged to live at this hotel: the

the terms are three rix-dollars a day, for which you have good lodging, and a well furniſhed table is provided. Gratitude induces me to ſay, that I received the greateſt attention and civility from many of the firſt people at Batavia, who, not content with ſhewing me every politeneſs in their power during my ſtay there, extended their good offices to me after my departure.

On the 21ſt of July, the *Snelheid*, a packet of 140 tons, belonging to the company, arrived at Onruſt, and I made application to the governor and council for a paſſage to Europe in that veſſel: on this, the captain of the packet was ordered to receive me, for which I paid 190 rix-dollars into the company's cheſt. The order to the captain ſpecified, that in conſideration of that ſum being paid, I was to have a paſſage to Europe in the Snelheid, and to be accommodated and victualled as a ſailor: I therefore found myſelf neceſſitated to make a further agreement with the captain for the uſe of half of his cabin, (Mr. Andrew Millar, late commiſſary of ſtores and proviſions at Port Jackſon having the other half) for which I was to pay him 300 rix-dollars, and my proportion of what

proviſions were laid in by him, above what the company allowed.

The captain of the packet having received his final orders, we ſailed from Onruſt on the 4th of Auguſt; and in the evening of the 5th, were clear of the ſtreights of Sunda.

It was now that the peſtiferous air of Batavia began to ſhew itſelf; for the veſſel had not been five days at ſea before ſix men were taken ill with the putrid fever; and very ſoon afterwards, the captain, his two mates, and all the ſailors, except four, were incapable of getting out of their beds; and what aggravated the horror of this ſituation was, that the ſurgeon, who indeed knew very little of his profeſſion, was ſo ill that he could not even help himſelf: in this dilemma, I found it abſolutely neceſſary to uſe every means for ſelf-preſervation; and having obtained the conſent of the captain (who was not yet delirious) and the chief mate, I ſpoke to the only four men who were well, and repreſented to them, that going below would ſubject them to the infection; I aſſured them that I would never go below myſelf, except on extraordinary occaſions, when I ſhould uſe every precaution againſt the infection; and I further obſerved,

that

that the preſervation of our lives and the veſſel, with the recovery of thoſe who were ſick, depended on their conforming to my orders; and that I hoped, with God's aſſiſtance, not only to preſerve them in health, but to get the veſſel into a port. They promiſed me implicit obedience, and I began to make a tent on the after part of the quarter deck, for us to lie under. I had great difficulty to make them relinquiſh the drams of new arrack, of which they got ten a day; but this was effected, and in lieu of it, I gave to each man three large wine glaſſes of port wine, with two tea-ſpoons full of bark in each glaſs: fortunately, I had a ſmall ſupply of thoſe articles, as there were not any medicines on board. Three of the ſick men ſoon died of the putrid fever, their faces being covered with purple ſpots: I ordered them to be laſhed up in their hammocks, and hove overboard with their cloaths, making thoſe who performed that office, waſh themſelves very freely with vinegar, and fill their noſes with tobacco. The captain was now delirious, as were moſt of thoſe who were ſick.

On the 12th, I obtained the captain and chief mate's conſent to bear up for the Iſle of France, when we ſhould get into the latitude of it.

On the 14th, my friend and companion Mr. Millar was taken ill, and the captain and moſt of the ſailors were dying, not having had any medicine adminiſtered to them during their illneſs: three or four among them, of a ſtrong conſtitution, were in a ſtate of raving madneſs, uttering dreadful imprecations againſt the doctor, ſo that I was obliged to order them to be laſhed in their hammocks, and they died a few days afterwards.

On the 29th of Auguſt, we made the iſland of Mauritius, and anchored the ſame day at the entrance of the north-weſt harbour. The captain and three ſailors died as we were carrying them on ſhore.

Moſt providentially, we had a ſucceſſion of the fineſt weather and the faireſt winds we could have wiſhed, from the time we left the ſtreights of Sunda until our arrival at the Iſle of France; and another great conſolation was, that the veſſel was perfectly tight.

The

The town of Port Louis is large, and covers a deal of ground, but the houſes are in general paltry buildings. Here are large ſtores, and every thing neceſſary for the equipment of fleets. The number of inhabitants on the iſland, excluſive of the military, is about 8000; and blacks, 12,000.

Freſh proviſions, eſpecially butchers meat, are very ſcarce here; what there is coſts 20 ſous per pound; but turtle is procured from *St. Branden*, and ſold at a much cheaper rate.

The general object of cultivation on this iſland is the indico, of which from four to five crops a year are procured: one perſon ſent to Europe 30,000 lb. in 1789, of a very ſuperior quality. Attempts have been made here to rear cochineal, as the iſland abounds with the plant which the inſects lie on, but a ſmall bird deſtroys the inſect. The ſoil of this iſland is little ſuperior to that at Port Jackſon.

I cannot omit mentioning the great civilities I received from Meſſieurs De Conway, M'Namarra, Fourneaux, Roſſilly, and in ſhort all the reſpectable people here, who all did their utmoſt to perſuade me to take

take my paſſage in La Nymphe frigate: Monſieur de Fourneaux very politely offered me half his cabbin, and no inducement was wanting to make me accept it; beſides, there was a probability of the fever not being totally eradicated in the packet; but as I heard of a miſunderſtanding between England and Spain, I thought it my duty to remain with that veſſel. I mention this circumſtance for no other reaſon than to expreſs my gratitude to the above officers for their polite attention to me during my ſhort ſtay at this iſland.

The packet being thoroughly cleanſed, and a freſh crew entered, which was compoſed of all nations, we ſailed on the 21ſt of September, having only four ſailors on board out of the twenty-ſix, which came from Batavia, the reſt being either dead, or left at the hoſpital with little hopes of recovery. Nothing material happened during our paſſage from the Iſle of France until our arrival at the Cape of Good Hope, on the 9th of October. Here I found Lieutenant Riou waiting for orders from England. As I underſtood that all veſſels belonging to the Dutch Company were ſtrictly forbid ſtopping at any port, or having communication with

any

any veſſels during their paſſage from the Cape to Amſterdam, I wrote a letter to Mr. Van de Graff, the Dutch governor, repreſenting my being charged with diſpatches, and requeſting that the captain might be permitted to heave the veſſel to, off the moſt convenient port in the Engliſh channel, in order to land me with the diſpatches: this requeſt he very readily granted, giving the captain an order for that purpoſe, and furniſhing me with a copy of it. After a pleaſant voyage of two months from the Cape of Good Hope, I arrived in England on the 20th of December, having been abſent on the public ſervice, in various ſtations, and in different places, in the ſouthern hemiſphere, three years and ſeven months.

Here ends Lieutenant King's *Journal*, which, as it gives an authentic account of the firſt ſettlement of a new colony, in a very diſtant region, muſt ever be intereſting to thoſe, who delight in tracing the origin of nations. The following Narrative was taken from the official diſpatches of Governor Phillip,

lip, and forms a continuation of the hiſtory of the people and country under his charge, from the concluſion of his late Voyage to the lateſt period.

CHAPTER XV.

An excurſion into the country.—An interview with the natives.—Governor Phillip wounded with a ſpear.—A ſecond interview with the natives.—Occurrences on that occaſion.—Five convicts effect their eſcape in a boat.—The ſettlement viſited by the natives.—Their cuſtoms.

TOWARDS the latter end of Auguſt, 1790, ſeveral officers made an excurſion into the country, and going ſouth-ſouth-weſt from Proſpect-Hill for twenty miles, they came to a run of water, which they ſuppoſed to be the head of the Nepean river. They deſcribed the country through which they paſſed to be good land for ten miles, the reſt ordinary ground, interſected by

by deep ravines and a large marſh, which they ſuppoſed, formed a very extenſive piece of water, after heavy rains.

A number of convicts going out to ſearch for ſweet tea, ſome of them ſeparated from the reſt, and were loſt in the woods for ſeveral days, and one of them was never heard of afterwards. It is hardly poſſible to conceive the obſtinacy and inattention of many of theſe people, even in matters which concern only their own ſafety.

In the morning of the 7th of September, Governor Phillip went down the harbour to fix on a ſpot for raiſing a brick column, which might point out the entrance to ſhips which were unacquainted with the coaſt, as the flag-ſtaff could not be ſeen by veſſels until they drew very near the land, and was alſo liable to be blown down.

A riſing ground at the diſtance of a cable's length from the ſouth head was choſen, and the ſtone neceſſary for the baſe of the column being already cut, that work was immediately begun, and the party were returning to Sydney, when the governor was informed by ſome officers, who had landed in Manly-Bay, and who were going on a ſhooting excurſion, that

that they had ſeen *Bannelong*, a native who had ran away from the ſettlement, and who had enquired after all his friends, and received ſeveral preſents. It ſeems Bannelong, and *Coalby*, another native who had eſcaped from the ſettlement, with near two hundred others, were aſſembled in Manly-Bay to feaſt on a dead whale which was lying on the beach. Bannelong ſent a large piece of it to the governor, as a preſent, which the ſailors had in the boat: he was very glad to ſee thoſe he knew of the party, particularly a native boy named *Nanbarre*, but ſeemed afraid of being re-taken, and would not permit any one to come ſo near as to lay their hands on him.

As Governor Phillip had always been deſirous of meeting with this man, and had ſought an opportunity from the day he left his houſe, he returned to the look-out, and collecting every little thing which was likely to pleaſe him, went to the ſpot where he had been ſeen. Several natives appeared on the beach as the governor's boat rowed into the bay, but on its nearer approach, they retired amongſt the trees.

An

An interview with a large party of the natives now took place, in which one of them wounded Governor Phillip dangerouſly with a ſpear; but, as all the particulars reſpecting this tranſaction have already been related in Captain Hunter's Journal, it is needleſs to detail them here.

Some days after this affair, as ſeveral officers were going down the harbour, they ſaw ſome natives, and amongſt them Bannelong and his wife; on this, the boat's head was put to the rocks, and he came down, ſhook hands with ſeveral of the party, and enquired if the governor was dead; they told him no; on which he promiſed to come and ſee him; ſaid he had beat the man who wounded him, and whoſe name he told them was *Wil-le-me-ring*, of the tribe of Kay-yee-my, the place where the governor was wounded.

The native boy and girl were in the boat, and through them this converſation was held: the girl pointed out one of the natives who ſhe ſaid was her father: none of theſe people ſhewed any ſigns of fear, though they ſaw the officers were armed, and the girl was very deſirous of remaining with them; ſhe was now of an age to want to form a connection with

with the other ſex, which ſhe had no opportunity of doing in the clergyman's family where ſhe lived, and very innocently told him, when ſhe aſked to go away, that ſhe wanted to be married. As it would be difficult to prevent her getting away, if ſhe was determined to go, it was thought moſt prudent to conſent to her leaving the ſettlement, and ſhe was told that ſhe would be permitted to go, and to take all her cloaths with her; and that whenever ſhe choſe to come and ſee her friends, whatever ſhe wiſhed for ſhould be given her; at the ſame time, ſeveral reaſons were urged, that were likely to induce her to remain in her preſent ſituation a few months longer, as ſhe did not ſufficiently underſtand the language to explain their intentions towards the natives ſo fully as could have been wiſhed.

On the 16th of September, a ſhoal of fiſh appeared on the coaſt, which extended as far as the eye could reach, and part of them entering the harbour, as many were caught at two hauls with the ſeine, as ſerved the whole ſettlement: there were not leſs than three thouſand, which, on an average, weighed about five pounds each.

Governor

Governor Phillip was ſo well recovered of his wound, as to be able to go in a boat on the 17th of September, to the place where Bannelong and his wife then reſided: he found nine natives on the ſpot, who informed him that Bannelong was out a fiſhing; the native girl was in the boat, and her father being among the natives, a hatchet and ſome fiſh were given him; in return for which, he gave the governor a ſhort ſpear that had been pointed with a knife, which the natives now uſed when they could procure one, in preference to the ſhell. The party had juſt left theſe people, and were going farther in queſt of Bannelong, when they perceived four canoes coming towards them, in one of which was the perſon they wanted; on this they returned to the Cove. As ſoon as Bannelong had laid up his canoe, he came to the boat, and held up both his hands, to ſhew that he had no arms: preſently afterwards, the party landed, and he joined them very readily, aſked Governor Phillip where he was wounded, and ſaid that he had beat the man who wounded him, and whoſe name he repeated: being told that the man would be killed for this treacherous action, he deſired

it might be done. A hatchet, ſome fiſhing-lines, and ſeveral other articles were given him, and he wanted to have ſome preſents that were brought for his wife *Ba-rang-aroo*; but this being refuſed, he readily went to fetch her: a petticoat, and ſeveral other little preſents were given to the lady, and a red jacket with a ſilver epaulet, which Bannelong uſed to wear when at the ſettlement, were now given him, which pleaſed him more than any thing elſe: on being aſked to dine with Governor Phillip the next day, he readily conſented, and promiſed to bring his wife.

Bannelong's wife, Ba-rang-aroo, appeared to be older than himſelf, and had had two children by a former huſband, both of which were dead: ſhe had been twice wounded by ſpears, one of which had paſſed through her thigh.

Though Bannelong did not pay Governor Phillip a viſit, as he had promiſed, he readily joined thoſe he ſaw in different parts of the harbour, notwithſtanding they were armed, and went in his canoe to the long-boat, though he ſaw ſeveral muſquets in her: his wife was along with him in the canoe,

and

and he gave thoſe in the boat to underſtand that he would pay the governor a viſit; probably the fear of being detained had hitherto prevented him, but whilſt there was the leaſt chance of his coming voluntarily, Governor Phillip was not willing to take him a ſecond time by force, as it was likely he would ſoon be reconciled to paſs a conſiderable part of his time at Sydney, when he found he could be his own maſter, and go and come when he pleaſed.

The column intended as a mark for the entrance of the harbour was now finiſhed; it ſtands (as has already been obſerved,) on a cliff, a cable's length from the ſouth-head: it is a brick column on a ſtone baſe, and riſes to the height of thirty feet.

In the night of the 26th of September, five convicts took a punt from Roſe-Hill, in which they came down to the look-out, where they exchanged the punt for a four-oared boat, and got off undiſcovered. Theſe people certainly meant to go along the coaſt to the northward, and to attempt getting to ſome of the Friendly Iſlands; but this project muſt be almoſt impoſſible, and there was every

reaſon to ſuppoſe they would periſh in a few days.

Governor Phillip went to Roſe-Hill on the 6th of October, and on his return he was repeatedly called to by Bannelong, who was on the north ſhore with ſeveral officers; and the ſurgeon, in whom he placed great confidence, being of the party, perſuaded him to come over to the governor: he brought three natives in his canoe, and they were all well pleaſed with hatchets and fiſhing-lines which were given them. It ſeems Bannelong's wife had oppoſed his coming, and finding her tears had no effect, ſhe flew into a violent paſſion, and broke a very fine fiz-gig, for which ſhe would probably have been very ſeverely chaſtiſed on her huſband's return, but for the interference of the ſurgeon, who carried theſe people back to their cave on the north ſhore, where they intended to reſide for ſome time. Bannelong appeared very much at his eaſe, and not under the leaſt apprehenſion of being detained; promiſing, when he went away, to bring his wife over, which he did two days afterwards: his ſiſter and two men came likewiſe, and a third ſoon followed: blankets, and ſome cloathing were given them, and each

each had a belly-full of fiſh; Bannelong ſat down to dinner with Governor Phillip, and drank his wine and coffee as uſual. The governor bought a ſpear from one of his viſitants, and endeavoured to make them underſtand that ſpears, lines, birds, or any thing they brought ſhould always be purchaſed; at the ſame time he promiſed Bannelong a ſhield, for which he was to bring a ſpear in return, as accuſtoming theſe people to barter was judged the moſt likely means of bringing them to reſide amongſt the coloniſts. The next day, a large party came over for the ſhield, but it was not finiſhed: two men of this party were owned by the native girl, who lived with the clergyman, as her brothers, and for whom ſhe procured two hatchets, which appeared to be the moſt valuable articles that could be given them. When Bannelong came for his preſent, thoſe who accompanied him, after ſtaying a ſhort time, went away, but he ſtaid dinner, and left the place highly delighted with his ſhield, which being made of ſole leather and covered with tin, was likely to reſiſt the force of their ſpears.

Some days after this interview, a canoe with Bannelong's ſiſter and ſeveral young people coming to one of the points of the cove, the girl who had now lived ſeventeen months with the clergyman's wife, joined them, and was ſo deſirous of going away that it was conſented to: the next day ſhe was ſeen naked in a canoe, but ſhe put on a petticoat before ſhe joined the clergyman and ſome others who went to viſit her; ſhe appeared to be pleaſed with having her liberty; and the boy, Nanbarre, who was of the party that went to ſee her, now wiſhed to ſtay with the natives all night; he was left behind, but the next morning he returned to the ſurgeon, with whom he lived, and having fared but badly, did not ſeem inclined to go to them again.

The natives now viſited the ſettlement daily, and Bannelong, who had not been there for ſeveral days, came early in the morning of the 17th, but took leave of Governor Phillip after breakfaſt, ſaying, that he was going a great way off, and would return, with two young men who were with him, after three days: there was reaſon to ſuppoſe that he was going to fight.

If

If the natives of this country be leſs civiliſed than the inhabitants of the neighbouring iſlands, they are much honeſter; for they very ſeldom attempt to take any thing by ſtealth; and, it is certain, that when a thief is caught, they beat him to death with ſticks.

A convict had been miſſing ſome time, and was reported to have been killed by the natives: thoſe who could have given any information of this man muſt have been with him, and conſequently expected puniſhment, if they were known, for having left their huts contrary to orders; it was, therefore, impoſſible to fix the report on any individual, and no information could be gained by thoſe who were ſent to ſearch the country for ſome miles round; but two parties of the natives had been ſeen, one party conſiſting of about forty, the other not more than half that number: ſoon afterwards, Bannelong, with ſixteen men and boys, were met by a ſerjeant and three men who had been ſent after the convict that was miſſing; Bannelong preſſed them very much to return with him and kill a native who was well known from having loſt an eye, and who was ſuppoſed to be a

leader of the tribe that reſide about Botany-Bay; but this requeſt not being complied with, the natives continued their route, and Colebe, who was of the party, came to dine with the Governor as he had promiſed, Bannelong and ſeveral others accompanying him. At dinner, Bannelong obſerved that his ſhield was a good one, and ſaid, that he had been to fight the man who had ſome time before wounded him, and that his ſpear had gone through both the ſhield and hand of his antagoniſt; he alſo ſaid, that the people he had been to fight with had killed the man who was loſt.

The native girl, who had left the ſettlement, returned, after being abſent fourteen days; but though ſhe appeared to have fared badly, and had been beat by her friend Colebe, yet ſhe would not remain at Sydney more than two days, after which ſhe returned to her companions.

It now appeared, that Governor Phillip did not wrong the natives in ſuppoſing that they treated their women with very little tenderneſs; for Bannelong had beat his wife twice very ſeverely in a ſhort time, and for which, as far as could be learnt from the girl,

girl, he had very little reaſon: ſtill ſhe appeared very fond of him, and he profeſſed great affection for her, but laughed when he was told that it was wrong to beat a woman: he now viſited the ſettlement daily, with his wife, ſeveral children, and half a dozen of his friends, and Colebe was generally one of the party.

It has already been obſerved, that the natives have ſome idea of a future ſtate, and that they believe in ſpirits; the following circumſtance leaves no doubt but that they likewiſe believe in charms:—Bannelong's wife one day complaining of a pain in the belly, went to the fire and ſat down with her huſband, who, notwithſtanding his beating her occaſionally, ſeemed to expreſs great ſorrow on ſeeing her ill, and after blowing on his hand, he warmed it, and then applied it to the part affected; beginning at the ſame time a ſong, which was probably calculated for the occaſion: a piece of flannel being warmed and applied by a bye-ſtander, rendered the warming his hand unneceſſary, but he continued his ſong, always keeping his mouth very near to the part affected, and frequently ſtopping to blow on it, making a noiſe after blowing

blowing in imitation of the barking of a dog; but though he blew ſeveral times, he only made that noiſe once at every pauſe, and then continued his ſong, the woman always making ſhort reſponſes whenever he ceaſed to blow and bark. How long this ceremony would have continued was uncertain, for Governor Phillip ſent for the doctor, and ſhe was perſuaded to take a little tincture of rhubarb, which gave her relief, and ſo put an end to the buſineſs.

Bannelong, with his wife and two children, who appeared to have been adopted by him when their parents died, now lived in a hut built for them on the eaſtern point of the cove; they were frequently viſited by many of the natives, ſome of whom daily came to the barracks; all of them were very fond of bread, and they now found the advantage of coming amongſt the ſettlers.

It had hitherto been the opinion at Sydney, that the cuſtom of loſing the front tooth amongſt the natives was confined to the men only, but a woman was lately ſeen who had loſt the front tooth, and two women were met with who had the ſeptum of the noſe perforated; one of them was Barangaroo, who

now viſited the ſettlement daily in company with her huſband, and ſeemed to be pleaſed as though ſhe thought herſelf dreſt when her noſe was occaſionally ornamented with a ſmall bone or a bit of ſtick: ſhe is very ſtrait and exceeding well made; her features are good, and though ſhe goes entirely naked, yet there is ſuch an air of innocence about her that cloathing ſcarcely appears neceſſary.

Theſe people are frequently ornamented, or, to ſpeak more properly, disfigured with broad white marks under the eyes and on the breaſts; but they ſeem to have another motive for uſing this mode of ornament, beſides a wiſh of appearing handſome, though as yet it had not been diſcovered. The red earth is likewiſe frequently uſed, generally about the noſe and under the eyes.

CHAPTER XVI.

Fruits in ſeaſon deſcribed.—The manners of the natives.—Diſputes with them.—Arrival of a veſſel from Batavia.

SEVERAL fruits peculiar to the country were now in ſeaſon: that which was ſuppoſed to be the fruit Captain Cook calls a cherry, the natives call *mizooboore*; the taſte of it is inſipid, and it differs little from another fruit ſimilar in its appearance, but ſomething ſmaller, and which, as well as the former, is found in great abundance: there is likewiſe a third ſort which differs as little in appearance and taſte. Though there is little variety either in the ſhape or taſte of the fruits juſt mentioned, yet, it is very remarkable, that the trees on which they grow are of very different kinds. The fruits, or berries, juſt mentioned, have ſo inſipid a taſte, that they are held in very little eſtimation by our coloniſts; but that is not the caſe with the acid berry, which is about the ſize of a currant, and grows on a tree, the leaves of which reſemble the broom: the acid of this fruit,

fruit, even when ripe, is very ſtrong, and is, perhaps, the pureſt in the world: it is pleaſant to the taſte, and Governor Phillip found it particularly ſo when on a journey in hot weather: the ſurgeon held it in great eſtimation as an antiſcorbutic; and, with a large proportion of ſugar, it makes excellent tarts and jellies. There is alſo another fruit, which, when ripe, is of a tranſparent red colour, about the ſize of a currant, and ſhaped like a heart: it has an agreeable flavour, leaving an aſtringency on the palate, and cannot be otherwiſe than wholeſome, as the ſettlers had ate great quantities of it at times, without any pernicious conſequences.

There is likewiſe a nut, which had violent effects on thoſe who ate it unprepared: the natives ſoak it in water for ſeven or eight days, changing the water every day; and at the expiration of that time they roaſt it in the embers; but the kernel is taken out of the hard ſhell with which it is encloſed, previous to its being put into the water: it is nearly equal to the cheſnut in goodneſs.

Boorong, the native girl who had lived with the clergyman, returned to him again, after a week's abſence: ſome officers had been down

down the harbour, and ſhe was very happy to embrace that opportunity of getting from the party ſhe had been with. By her own account, ſhe had joined the young man ſhe wiſhed to marry, and had lived with him three days; but he had another wife, who the girl ſaid was jealous, and had beat her; indeed, evident marks of this appeared about her head, which was ſo bruiſed as to require the ſurgeon's attention: in return for this unkind treatment, it ſeems her favourite had beat his wife. But opportunities were not now wanting to ſhew that the women are in general treated very roughly; for Colebe brought his wife to viſit Governor Phillip, and though ſhe was big with child, and appeared to be within a very few days of her time, there were ſeveral wounds on her head, which ſhe ſaid he had lately given her: he ſeemed to be pleaſed that ſhe could ſhew her marks, and took ſome pains to inform the governor that he had beat her with a wooden ſword.

Early in the morning of the 13th of November, ſixteen of the natives viſited the ſettlement, and ſome fiſh being diſtributed amongſt them, they made a fire in the governor's

vernor's yard, and ſat down to breakfaſt in great good humour: thoſe that were ſtrangers appeared highly delighted with the novelties that ſurrounded them. Amongſt the ſtrangers, there was a woman whoſe ſkin, when free from dirt and ſmoke, was of a bright copper colour; her features were pleaſing, and of that kind of turn, that had ſhe been in any European ſettlement, no one would have doubted her being a Mulatto Jeweſs. Bannelong, who had been for two days with ſome of his party at Botany-Bay, came along with theſe people and brought his wife with him: ſhe appeared to be very ill, and had a freſh wound on her head, which he gave Governor Phillip to underſtand ſhe had merited, for breaking a fiz-gig and a throwing-ſtick. The governor's reaſoning with him on this ſubject had no effect; he ſaid ſhe was bad, and therefore he had beat her; neither could it be learned what inducement this woman could have to do an act which ſhe muſt have known would be followed by a ſevere beating; for Bannelong either did not underſtand the queſtions put to him, or was unwilling to anſwer them. When theſe people had finiſhed their breakfaſt, they all went to the hoſpital to get the

womens'

womens' heads dreſſed; for beſides Bannelong's wife, a woman who was a ſtranger, had received a blow on the head, which had laid her ſcull bare: after this buſineſs was over, moſt of them returned and ſat down in the yard at the back of Governor Phillip's houſe; but Bannelong went into the houſe as uſual, and finding the governor writing, ſat down by him: he appeared very much out of humour, and frequently ſaid that he was going to beat a woman with a hatchet which he held in his hand: it was impoſſible to perſuade him to ſay he would not beat her, and after ſome time he got up, ſaying that he could not dine with the governor, as he was going to beat the woman: Governor Phillip then inſiſted on going with him, to which he made no objection, though he was given to underſtand that he would not be ſuffered to beat any woman, and they ſet off for his hut at the point. The governor took his orderly ſerjeant along with him, and they were joined by the judge advocate.

Though Bannelong had frequently ſaid he would kill the woman, when Governor Phillip was endeavouring to perſuade him not to beat her, yet it could not be believed that he had

had any ſuch intention; nor did they ſuppoſe there would be much trouble in preventing his beating her; however, fearing he might ſtrike her a blow with the hatchet which muſt have been fatal, it was taken from him before they got to the hut, and as he ſeemed unwilling to part with it, the governor gave him his cane; but his expreſſions and his countenance ſoon made them think even the cane too much for him to be truſted with, and that was taken from him alſo.

On their arrival at the hut, they found five men, two youths, and ſeveral women and children: ſome of theſe people were on the graſs before the door of the hut, and though the governor fixed his eyes on Bannelong, in order to find out the object of his revenge, and whom he determined to protect, yet this furious ſavage ſeized a wooden ſword, and ſtruck a young female, who was either aſleep, or ſeeing him coming had hid her face, over the head, and repeated his blow before the weapon could be wreſted from him; he then got a hatchet, which was likewiſe taken away.

Reaſoning with him was now out of the queſtion; the ſavage fury which took poſ-

ſeſſion of him when he found himſelf kept from the girl, who was lying ſenſeleſs, is not to be deſcribed: he had now got another wooden ſword, but the judge-advocate and the ſerjeant held him, and what paſſed being obſerved from the Supply, Lieut. Ball, and the ſurgeon of the hoſpital, came over to the ſpot armed, and the poor girl was put into the boat without any oppoſition on the part of the natives, who had armed themſelves the moment they ſaw Governor Phillip and his party interfere, and one of them repeatedly preſſed him to give Bannelong the hatchets and ſword which had been taken from him.

When the boat was gone off with the girl, our party returned to the governor's houſe, ſeveral of the native men and boys joining them, as well as Bannelong; and, after ſome time, when his paſſion began to ſubſide, Governor Phillip gave him to underſtand, that he was exceedingly angry with him for attempting to kill a woman, and tried to divert him from his purpoſe by threats, telling him that if he did kill her, or even beat her any more, he ſhould loſe his life; but threats had no greater effect than entreaties, and all his anſwers ſhewed that he thought himſelf greatly injured

injured by having his victim taken from him; ſaying that ſhe was his, that her father was the man who had wounded him over the eye, that all their tribe were bad, and that the governor ſhould ſee he would kill her; and when the judge-advocate reaſoned with him, and told him that if he killed the girl the governor would kill him, he marked with his finger thoſe parts of the head, breaſt, and arms, where he ſaid he would wound her, before he cut her head off: in this reſolution he went away, and the girl was removed in the evening from the Supply to Governor Phillip's houſe, where a young man who lived with Bannelong deſired to remain with her, and, from the tenderneſs he ſhewed her when Bannelong was not preſent, was ſuppoſed to be her huſband; though he had not dared to open his lips, or even to look diſſatisfied, when her life was in danger.

After an abſence of two days, Bannelong returned to the governor's houſe, apparently in good humour, and ſaid he would not beat the girl; at the ſame time he gave them to underſtand, that he had again beat his wife about the head, and that he had received a ſevere blow on the ſhoulder from a club in

return; on this, Governor Phillip propoſed their going to the hoſpital to have his own ſhoulder and his wife's head dreſſed, but this he refuſed, ſaying, that White (the ſurgeon) would ſhoot him, and that he durſt not ſleep in the houſe which had been built for him, as the ſurgeon would ſhoot him in the night; this ſtory was not told without many threats on his part; and during the recital, he twice went out to fetch a ſpear, which the governor had made him leave in a back room, in order to ſhew that he was not afraid, and that he would uſe it if he ſaw the ſurgeon; however, Governor Phillip ſoon convinced him that he was not to be ſhot unleſs he killed the girl, or threw ſpears at the white men. The moment Bannelong was ſatisfied that the ſurgeon was ſtill his friend, he ſaid he would go to him for a plaiſter for his ſhoulder, and another for his wife's head: but, as the governor wiſhed to be preſent when they firſt met, he ſent for the ſurgeon, whom Bannelong received as uſual, gave him part of what he was eating, and went with him to the hoſpital; after which, he went to the ſurgeon's houſe, and the girl being there to whom he had lately ſhewn ſo much animoſity,

ſity, he took her by the hand, and ſpoke to her in a friendly manner; but this attention ſo exaſperated his wife, and put her in ſuch a rage, that thoſe who were preſent at the time could not, without ſome difficulty, prevent her from knocking the girl on the head with a club which ſhe had taken from one of the men for that purpoſe; nor did her huſband ſeem inclined to prevent her till he was ſpoke to, when he gave her a pretty ſmart ſlap on the face; on this, his wife left them crying with paſſion, and came over to the governor's houſe, where the girl was now brought for greater ſecurity, and was followed by ſeveral men. Governor Phillip had ordered the girl to be put into his maid ſervant's room, with which Bannelong ſeemed pleaſed, and deſired him to let the young man who had remained with her at the ſurgeon's, ſtay there likewiſe: in the mean time, his wife was very noiſy, and uſed many threats; ſhe had got her huſband's ſpears, which ſhe ſat down upon, and would not give them up to a ſoldier, whom the governor had ordered to take them from her, until force was uſed; and when the ſoldier had them, Bannelong wanted to take them from

him, ſaying he would give them to the governor: they were then delivered to him, and he immediately gave them to Governor Phillip, making ſigns for them to be put into the houſe: this, at a time when there was a guard of ſoldiers drawn up in the yard, and when he was telling his companions that the ſoldiers would fire, ſhewed that he placed ſome confidence in the governor; though at the ſame time he was very violent, and appeared very much inclined to uſe his club againſt thoſe who prevented his going into the houſe; and one of the natives who was generally his companion, ſeemed ready to ſupport him in any attempt he might be diſpoſed to make; on this they were given to underſtand, that if any of the ſoldiers were ſtruck, they would be put to death, and Governor Phillip immediately ordered them all to be turned out of the yard, except Bannelong and the young man he had deſired might remain with the girl: Bannelong's wife was turned away amongſt the reſt, but this did not prevent his ſtaying to dinner, and behaving with the ſame indifference as if nothing had paſſed; and in the evening, when he was going away, a ſcene took place which

which was little expected: the young man who had been ſo deſirous of remaining with the girl, would now go away, and the girl cried, and forced her way out of the room to go with Bannelong: ſhe was brought in again, and told if ſhe went away ſhe would be beat, but Bannelong ſaid he would not beat her, neither was he angry with his wife now; and the young man preſſed Governor Phillip very much to let her go, ſaying Barangaroo would not beat the girl, as her paſſion was over, and ſhe was now very good.

As the information of Barangaroo's anger having ſo entirely ſubſided, could only have been brought by a boy, who had returned to the houſe in the afternoon, the governor was not the leaſt inclined to let the girl go away; but there was no poſſibility of detaining her unleſs ſhe was confined, and there appeared ſo much ſincerity in Bannelong's countenance, when he ſaid ſhe ſhould not be beat, that leave was given, and the moment the girl was without the gate, ſhe ran towards Bannelong's hut, without waiting for thoſe who were going along with her.

Governor Phillip himſelf was fully perſuaded that Bannelong would keep his word,

but the general opinion was, that the girl would be ſacrificed; and in the evening, a conſiderable number of natives being ſeen about the hut, gave riſe to various ſtories; but the next day Bannelong came to dinner, and ſaid he had ſent the girl to her father, which was afterwards confirmed by others. How Bannelong got this girl into his poſſeſſion could not be learnt; but it appeared ſhe was the ſame girl whom he went to look after when he ran away from the ſettlement: ſhe appeared to be about fifteen years of age, and when ſhe went away, her wounds were in a fair way of doing well: fortunately for her, the weapon which had firſt preſented itſelf when Bannelong beat her, was a boy's wooden ſword, and made of very light wood; but theſe people pay little attention to wounds, and even thoſe which by the faculty are deemed dangerous, do not ſeem to require the common attention of cloſing the lips of the wound and keeping it clean; this ſhews that they muſt be of a moſt excellent habit of body.

A ſmall boat belonging to the hoſpital was loſt, with five convicts, in going down the harbour: a party who went in ſearch of the boat

boat found the wreck of her, and one of the bodies; as ſhe had been ſeen under ſail when it blew hard, it ſhould ſeem that the men ſent in her did not know how to manage her, and were driven on the rocks. Several natives aſſiſted in ſaving the oars and other articles that were driven aſhore; and Colebe, who was on the ſpot, exerted himſelf greatly on this occaſion, and ſaved the ſeine, which was entangled amongſt the rocks: for theſe ſervices, they were all rewarded with blankets and ſome cloathing; but, however well you may cloath theſe people, they generally return naked the next day. Of all the cloaths, and the multiplicity of other articles which had been given to Bannelong, very little now remained in his poſſeſſion; his ſhield, and moſt of his cloaths, were, by his own account, ſent a great diſtance off; but whether he had loſt them, or given them away, was uncertain.

Governor Phillip had recently ordered a ſmall hut to be built for his own accommodation at Roſe-Hill, and he was going to remain there a few days, when ſeveral of the natives were deſirous of accompanying him, amongſt whom were Bannelong and Colebe:

Colebe: the governor got into his boat with three of them, and Bannelong, going to fetch his cloak, was detained by his wife; however, as they were going out of the cove, he appeared on the rocks, and got into the boat notwithſtanding her threats; but, the moment the boat put off, ſhe went to her canoe, which was a new one, and after driving her paddles through the bottom, ſhe threw them into the water, and afterwards went off to their hut, probably to do more damage. The huſband had endeavoured to pacify her, and promiſed ſeveral times not to be abſent more than one night; as it was likely that he would prefer remaining behind, though he appeared unwilling to aſk to be landed, it was propoſed to him, and after picking up the paddles which his wife had thrown away, he was put on ſhore: the governor then proceeded to Roſe-Hill, with Colebe and two other natives, none of whom ever opened their lips during this altercation: indeed, none of theſe people have ever been ſeen to interfere with what did not immediately concern themſelves.

The three natives ſlept that night at Roſe-Hill, and though fed very plentifully, yet,

the next morning, they were very desirous of returning; on this, Governor Phillip sent the boat down with them, on the return of which he fully expected to hear that mistress Barangaroo's head was under the care of the surgeon; but, to his great surprise, both she and her husband came up in the boat the next morning, and Bannelong said he had not beat her; but whether he was deterred by what had so frequently been said to him on the subject, or from some other cause, could not be known: however, a reconciliation had taken place, and they both dined with the governor in great good humour. Every thing this couple wished for was given them, and they had both fish and *baggary*; but after dinner was over, the lady wanted to return, and Bannelong said she would cry if she was not permitted to go; so that late in the afternoon, the governor was obliged to send the boat down with them.

The native girl who lived with the clergyman, had left his house some time, and now resided with the Cammeragals: on going away, she promised to return with the young man she wanted to marry, and his present wife; from which circumstance it seems pretty

pretty clear, that when a native can procure two women, the cuſtom of the country allows them to have two wives; and there is ſome reaſon to ſuppoſe that moſt of their wives are taken by force from the tribes with whom they are at variance, as the females bear no proportion to the males.

Colebe had left his wife at Botany-Bay, and ſhe came over to Sydney on the 23d of December, bringing an infant with her not more than two or three days old; the child was laid on a piece of bark, and both the parents appeared to treat it with great tenderneſs: they took up their reſidence for that night in Governor Phillip's houſe, and a family, who accompanied Colebe's wife, gave an opportunity of obſerving, that the marriage ceremony in this country, whatever it may be, is not very binding: this man belonged to the tribe who reſide about Botany-Bay, but he had occaſionally lived at Sydney for ſome time paſt, and a woman whoſe name was *Mawberry*, had been his wife; but it ſeems he had broke her arm with beating her, and had turned her away; and he had got another woman for a wife, who came along with him, bringing alſo a child about three years

of

of age. Mawberry, his firſt wife, happened to be at the governor's houſe when he came in, and did not ſeem pleaſed at the meeting.

This man, with his wife and child, after remaining at Governor Phillip's two days, were going away; and, as uſual, had bread and fiſh given them for their journey; but it ſhould ſeem that they could not agree, for he took away his firſt wife, and left the woman and child who came along with him behind. The poor woman ſhed tears when Governor Phillip enquired into the matter, and, after repeatedly uſing the word *yalloway*, which is a term of execration, ſhe ſaid ſhe would live with his ſervants, which ſhe was permitted to do. Beſides this perſon, Governor Phillip had a further addition to his family of a young woman, who for ſome time had been deſirous of being received amongſt his maid ſervants, and a youth about fourteen years of age, both of whom appeared much pleaſed with their ſituations.

CHAPTER XVII.

The depredations of the natives.—Bannelong's behaviour.—The return of Bannelong to the Settlement.—The manners of the natives further deſcribed.

SEVERAL of the natives who had been pretty conſtant viſitors at Sydney for ſome weeks, were detected ſtealing potatoes on the 28th of December; and, on the perſon they belonged to endeavouring to drive them out of his garden, a fiz-gig was thrown at him. Theſe people had lately made a practice of threatening any perſon whom they found in a hut alone, unleſs bread was given to them; and one of thoſe who were ſuſpected in the preſent inſtance, had, on ſeveral occaſions, ſhewn himſelf to be a daring fellow, who did not ſeem to dread any conſequences. As it was neceſſary to prevent theſe depredations in future, a ſerjeant and ſix privates were ſent out in order to ſecure the three natives who had been digging up the potatoes, and particularly the man who threw the fiz-gig; but not

not to fire on them, unleſs they made uſe of their ſpears or other offenſive weapons. Governor Phillip, accompanied by two or three officers, followed the party to a place where the natives had retired and made a fire; at which the ſerjeant, who arrived there a few minutes before, found two men, one of whom he laid hold of, and the other was ſeized by the ſurgeon's mate of the Sirius, who went with the party, as he knew the men they were in ſearch of: both theſe men, however, got away; and a club, which at firſt was taken for a ſpear, being thrown by one of them, three muſquets were fired. Two women and a child were found at the fire, but as it was then dark, it was in vain to look for the two men, though one of them was ſuppoſed to be wounded. The women were brought away, together with ſeveral ſticks, which the natives uſe for digging roots, and ſome other articles, in order to learn more fully who were the aggreſſors.

The women, though alarmed at firſt, yet, when they got to governor Phillip's houſe, appeared under no concern, but ſlept that night in a ſhed in the yard, as much at their eaſe as if nothing had happened; though it was

was impoſſible for them to know that the men fired at were not killed; and one of them was huſband to one of the women: the other was the woman who had been left at the governor's houſe, when her huſband took away a former wife.

Some bread and fiſh being given to the women the next morning, they went away, well pleaſed with their reception.

On the 29th of December, Bannelong made his appearance at Governor Phillip's houſe, after an abſence of ten days, and brought his wife with him: he ſaid he had been with a great number of the Cameragals, and they had drawn the front tooth from ſeveral young men, and had raiſed thoſe ſcars which the natives regard as ornaments. The largeſt of theſe ſcars are made by cutting two lines through the ſkin, parallel to each other, with a ſharp ſhell, and afterwards ſtripping off the intermediate ſkin: this operation is repeated till the wound riſes conſiderably above the fleſh, after which, it is ſuffered to heal over. Theſe ſcars, or ornaments, are not very common among the women, yet ſome have them on the arms, back, and breaſts. Bannelong had a throwing-ſtick, which

which he took pains to ſhew had been cut for the purpoſe of knocking out the front tooth, and there was ſome reaſon to think he had performed that office: it ſeems, he was now on good terms with the Cameragals, as he ſaid they were all good men; and being aſked if he had ſeen the man who threw the ſpear at Governor Phillip, he ſaid yes, and had ſlept with him; nor was there any reaſon to ſuppoſe he had ever beat, or even quarreled with him on that account. Bannelong's wife, who had been with him on this excurſion, was painted in a different manner to what ſhe had been ſeen before, and it appeared to have been done with a good deal of attention: her cheeks, noſe, and upper lip, were rubbed over with red ochre, on which, and under the eyes, ſome white clay was laid in ſpots; the ſmall of her back was likewiſe rubbed with red ochre, and ſhe ſeemed to be ſenſible that ſhe was finer than common. After dinner, this couple went away, and the girl who had been deſirous of living with the governor's ſervants, wanted to go along with them, which ſhe was permitted to do. This girl, who might be about eighteen years old, ſtripped herſelf before ſhe went away, but

kept her night-cap to ſleep in, as her head had been ſhaved when ſhe was firſt taken into the governor's family: ſhe never had been under any kind of reſtraint, ſo that her going away could only proceed from a preference to the manner of life in which ſhe had been brought up, and which is rather ſurpriſing, as the women are certainly treated with great cruelty; this, however, the cuſtom of the country ſeems to have perfectly reconciled them to.

Two coloniſts, who had been in a boat fiſhing, returned with a piece of intelligence very little to the credit of Bannelong, who had robbed them of what fiſh they had caught; and, as they had no arms, and he had ſeveral ſpears in his canoe, along with his wife and ſiſter, they were deterred from making any reſiſtance. In conſequence of the fiſhing-boat being robbed, orders were given that no boat in future ſhould go out of the cove unarmed, and the natives were forbid ever going to the weſtern point of the cove, where they ſtole the potatoes and threw the fiz-gig.

On the 3d of January, 1791, ſeveral of the natives came to Governor Phillip's houſe,

and told him that the native who had been fired at on the 28th of December, was wounded and would die; it was explained to them, that the reaſon of his being fired at, was, his attempting to wound a white man: on this, they did not appear diſſatisfied. Bannelong and his wife came in ſoon afterwards, and Governor Phillip charged him with taking the fiſh from the two coloniſts, which he denied; ſaying he had been a great way off; but when the two perſons were ſent for, and he found himſelf known, he entered into a long converſation, the purport of which was, an endeavour to juſtify himſelf; and this he did with an inſolence that explained itſelf very clearly: he frequently mentioned the man who had been wounded, and threatened revenge; but appearing to recollect himſelf, he offered the governor his hand, which not being accepted, he grew violent, and ſeemed inclined to make uſe of his ſtick. One of the centinels was now called in, as it was much feared he would do ſome violent act, that would oblige Governor Phillip to order him to be put to death; for his behaviour was the height of ſavage inſolence, and would have been immediately puniſhed in any other

perſon; but this man had ſo often made uſe of the word *be-ah-nah*, that they wiſhed to bring him to reaſon without proceeding to force; eſpecially, as it was ſuggeſted by an officer who was in the room, that he might not be underſtood clearly, and the governor was very unwilling to deſtroy the confidence Bannelong had for ſome time placed in him, which the ſlighteſt puniſhment or confinement would have done: he therefore told him to come near, for he was then ſtanding at ſome diſtance, but he refuſed and went away.

Bannelong had not left the governor with any intention of returning; for, in paſſing the wheelwright's ſhop, the workmen being at dinner, he ſtole a hatchet, with which, though purſued, he got clear off.

In the afternoon, the ſurgeon and ſome others went to the place where the wounded native was ſaid to be, having directions to bring him to the hoſpital, if there were any hopes of his recovery.

When they got to the ſpot to which the native boy and girl, who were in the boat, directed them, two natives appeared; one of whom, having been concerned in ſtealing the potatoes,

potatoes, kept at a diſtance; the other came near enough to converſe with them, and ſaid, the man they were in ſearch of was dead, in an adjoining cove, whither they went and found his body. The ball had paſſed through the ſhoulder, and had cut the ſubclavian artery: the body was warm, and as his friends had left it covered with ſome boughs and fern, it was probable they did not intend either to bury or burn it. It proved to be the man who had thrown the fiz-gig; and as there was a neceſſity for firing on him, the taking place of the ball was rather to be wiſhed for.

Two native youths who had frequently left Governor Phillip's houſe, in order to have their front teeth drawn, had now been abſent ſeveral days for that purpoſe. They were ſeen in a bay down the harbour on the 8th of February, where a conſiderable number of the natives were aſſembled, it was ſuppoſed not leſs than a hundred, including women and children. Moſt of the men were painted, and it ſhould ſeem that they were aſſembled for the purpoſe of drawing the front teeth from ſeveral men and boys. Soon afterwards, the two youths returned to the governor's; they had their heads bound round

with ruſhes, which were ſplit, and the white ſide was put outwards: ſeveral pieces of reed were ſtuck through this fillet and came over the forehead; their arms were likewiſe bound round and ornamented in the ſame manner, and each had a black ſtreak on his breaſt, which was broad at one end, and terminated in a point. They had loſt their front teeth, and conſidering their manner of drawing teeth in this country, it was not ſurpriſing to ſee that one of them had loſt a part of his jaw-bone, which was driven out with the tooth.

Both theſe boys appeared to be in pain, but they would not own it, and ſeemed to value themſelves on having undergone the operation; though why it is performed, or why the females loſe a part of the little finger, could not as yet be learnt.

The natives continued to viſit Sydney after Bannelong ſtole the hatchet, and behaved in a manner that gave every one reaſon to think he never would return; this, however, was not the caſe; for, after having frequently viſited the fiſhing-boats, and made many enquiries to know if Governor Phillip was angry, and would ſhoot him, he ventured to go to the hoſpital, and ſeemed very deſir-

ous

ous of knowing if he might come to the governor's houſe; at the ſame time, he named a man who, he ſaid, had ſtolen the hatchet, and denied having ever uſed any threats: however, not being ſatisfied with the anſwers which were given to him, he went away; but ſome days afterwards he came to the governor's, who, happening to be in the yard when he came to the gate, ordered him away. He was ſeen ſoon afterwards, and as he appeared very deſirous of being received again, and diſclaimed any knowledge of the hatchet, or any intention of revenging the death of the native who had been ſhot, Governor Phillip appeared to believe him, and he was permitted to come into the yard, which was always open to the natives, and ſome bread and fiſh were given him; but he was no longer permitted to enter the houſe; this was putting him on a level with the other natives, and he appeared to feel his degradation; but it did not prevent him from repeating his viſits very frequently.

On the 28th of February, a fiſhing-boat, in working up the harbour, filled; fortunately, ſhe was an Engliſh cutter, and did not ſink. A young woman, a little girl, and

two children, (all natives) were in the boat when the accident happened: the young woman had the two children on her ſhoulders in a moment, and ſwam on ſhore with them; the girl alſo ſwam on ſhore, as did ſuch of the boat's crew that could ſwim. Several of the natives ſeeing this accident as the boat drove towards the rocks, gave them every poſſible aſſiſtance, without which, in all probability, one of the crew would have been drowned.——After clearing the boat, they collected the oars and ſuch articles as had been driven on ſhore in different places; and in theſe friendly offices, Bannelong was very aſſiduous: this behaviour gave Governor Phillip an opportunity of receiving him in a more kindly manner than he had done ſince his bad behaviour.

Making love in this country is always prefaced by a beating, which the female ſeems to receive as a matter of courſe. The native girl, who ſtill reſided occaſionally at the clergyman's, had been abſent two days, when ſhe returned with a bad wound on the head, and ſome ſevere bruiſes on her ſhoulder; the girl whoſe life Governor Phillip had ſaved, returned with her; ſhe alſo had a wound on her head, and one of her arms

was

was much bruiſed by a blow with a club: the ſtory they told was, that two men who frequently viſited the ſettlement, wanted to ſleep with them, and on their refuſing, had, as uſual on ſuch occaſions, beat them moſt unmercifully.

Bannelong, after an abſence of ſeveral days, returned to the ſettlement; and the ſervices he had rendered the boat's crew when they were in danger of being loſt, being conſidered as an atonement for his paſt offences, he was admitted into Governor Phillip's houſe; in conſequence of this reconciliation, the number of viſitors greatly increaſed, the governor's yard being their head quarters.

CHAPTER XVIII.

An excurſion into the country.—Occurrences on the journey.—Surpriſing dexterity of the natives in climbing trees.—Their ſuperſtition.—Their method of curing wounds.—Their manners and diſpoſition.

ON the 11th of April, 1791, Governor Phillip left Roſe-Hill with a party, intending to reach Hawkeſbury-River, oppoſite Richmond-Hill; and, if poſſible, to croſs the river and get to the mountains. Beſides the governor, the party conſiſted of a ſervant, and three convicts, who were good markſmen, eight ſoldiers, two ſerjeants, one captain, Lieutenant Tench, and Lieutenant Dawes; they took ſeven days proviſions with them. It was near eleven o'clock when the party ſet off, and, after croſſing Roſe-Hill creek, they went to the northward, as Governor Phillip wiſhed to ſee if, after ſo long a drought, there was any water in a ravine near to which he intended to place a ſettler, the ground being good, lying well for cultivation,

tion, and having plenty of water where the farm-houſe was intended to be fixed.

Water being found in the bottom of the ravines, our party ſhaped their courſe ſo as to croſs a part of the country, with which they were unacquainted, going north-weſt by the compaſs, and counting their paces. Colebe, and Ballederry, the young man who has been mentioned as living chiefly at Governor Phillip's houſe, were deſirous of joining this party; and, as much information was expected from them, they were encouraged to go, and they carried their own proviſions. After paſſing ſeveral deep ravines, and going round the heads of others, over a barren country for an hour, the land grew better, and was tolerable, till one o'clock, when it again grew bad and rocky. The country continued a dry, arid ſoil, and the ſurface was moſtly covered with looſe ſtones, till forty minutes paſt three o'clock, when they came to ſome pools of good water, which were very acceptable, as one of the party was taken ill. Here they made fires and laid down for the night. In the courſe of the day, they had ſeen numbers of Pattagorong,

and

and Baggaray; in one herd, it was ſuppoſed there could not be leſs than forty.

Soon after the fires were lighted, the voice of a native was heard in the woods, hunting his dog; and, as Colebe and Ballederry were very deſirous of having an interview with him, though they ſaid the tribe of *Bu-ru-be-rongal*, who were bad men and their enemies, reſided near the ſpot, they frequently hallooed, and were anſwered by the ſtranger; and, as the voice drew nearer, they deſired our party would all lie down and keep ſilence. A light was now ſeen in the woods, and our natives advancing towards it, a pretty long converſation enſued between them and the ſtranger, who approached them with great precaution: a little boy who was with him carried the fire, which was a piece of the bark of the tea-tree. This boy being ſent forward firſt, joined Colebe and Ballederry, who, having told the ſtranger their names, the tribe to which they belonged, and received the like information from him, they joined, and the ſtranger was now told the names of the party who remained at the fire; at the ſame time, ſome of them were deſired to ſpeak.——At Governor Phillip's approach,

the

the boy ran away, and the man did not appear perfectly at his eaſe when he ſaw four or five perſons near him, though none of them were armed. They were all introduced to the ſtranger by name, and he was preſſed to come to their fire, which was forty or fifty yards diſtant; but this he declined, ſaying he would go and fetch his family, and would return in the morning. Colebe and Ballederry told this man that their party were going to the river, which he pointed out as lying in the direction they had taken. This man had a ſtone hatchet, a ſpear, and a throwing-ſtick, which one of our natives was very deſirous of his leaving; probably as a pledge for his returning in the morning, but this he refuſed: he was a young man, of the tribe of Bu-ru-be-ron-gal, and named *Bur-ro-wan*; his hair was ornamented with the tails of ſeveral ſmall animals, and he had preſerved all his teeth. On Colebe being aſked how this man lived, he ſaid that he had no canoe, but lived by the chace. The next morning, (the 12th of April,) our party ſet off at half paſt ſix o'clock, keeping their courſe north-weſt, through a poor country, though covered with timber, till three quarters paſt eight, when

when they ſaw the river, which, in this ſituation, is about 300 feet wide. The party were now eighteen miles and an half from Roſe-Hill, which bore from them north 28° weſt. The current in the river was running down, and they ſet off at half paſt ten o'clock, to follow its windings, as it ran to the eaſtward.

Several good ſituations were ſeen on the oppoſite ſide of the river as our party went along, and the ground appeared to be good: they alſo paſſed ſome good ſpots on their ſide of the river, and ſaw ſeveral places where the natives had ſlept on its banks. Ducks were ſeen in great numbers, but the party ſeldom got a ſhot.—In the afternoon, a creek obliged them to leave the banks of the river, and go round its head, as it was too deep to croſs: having rounded the head of this creek, they found themſelves on the borders of a river not more than eighty feet wide. In the afternoon, they fell in with one of the native's hunting-huts, which Colebe and Ballederry would have cut to pieces, had not Governor Phillip prevented them; they ſaid it belonged to their enemies, and they were much diſpleaſed at not being permitted to deſtroy it.

The

The natives were known to eat a grub which is found in the ſmall gum-tree, and when our party came to the creek already mentioned, a native fled on their approach, leaving his fire, and ſome decayed wood he had drawn out of the creek, for the purpoſe of procuring a large worm which is found in it, and which they eat. The ſmell of this wood is ſo ſtrong, that few Europeans are able to bear it for any length of time; indeed, it cannot be diſtinguiſhed from the fouleſt privy. At four o'clock the party halted and made fires for the night, being all pretty well tired. Juſt before they ſtopped for the night, ſeveral natives were heard, and Colebe and Ballederry wanted to join them, but they went away in their canoes. In the morning of the 13th, the party ſet off again, ſtill following the creek, which was now little larger than a good ditch, and went through a very barren rocky country, until noon, when, being at the head of the creek, they croſſed it, and, after reſting ſome time, they endeavoured to go to the north-weſt, in order to fall in with the river which they had loſt by going round the creek in the afternoon of the preceding day; but they were

ſoon

ſoon ſtopped by a deep ravine; and the ſurgeon going to a riſing ground on the left, ſaw the country open to the weſtward, and thought he could diſtinguiſh Richmond-Hill; this led them all to the ſpot, and, from the break in the mountain, and the trending of the land, Governor Phillip imagined it to be Richmond-Hill which they ſaw, being the ſouthern extremity of a range of hills. It bore weſt by ſouth, and appeared to be from eleven to thirteen miles diſtant, as near as could be determined.

The place from whence our party had this proſpect, was called *Tench's Proſpect-Hill*, that officer being of the party, and having from thence ſeen Richmond-Hill for the firſt time.—The ſpot where they had made the river on the 12th, being little more than four miles diſtant, it was thought beſt to return there, and from thence to trace the river to to the weſtward till they got oppoſite to Richmond-Hill. The Governor was well aware of the difficulties they would have to encounter on the banks of a river where walking was laborious, and every little creek they met with would oblige them to follow it up the country till they could croſs it; but

in

in a country like this, you may travel many miles through the woods and not get ſight of very high land, though it may not be half a mile from you.

Our party ſet off, in order to get back to ſleep near the head of the creek, which they had croſſed at noon, and which they ſoon attained: it was flood-tide when they got there, and they found the tide to riſe about eighteen inches, making high water at nine o'clock: this was on the night of the 13th. After croſſing the creek at half paſt ſeven o'clock the next morning, they ſhaped a courſe that was likely to carry them to the river, without being embarraſſed with the bad walking on its banks or the windings of the creek, until they got near the ſpot, from whence they propoſed taking a freſh departure.

After croſſing the creek, and ſome very rocky ground, they had good walking over a country, full of timber and pleaſing to the eye; but the ground was poor, and the ſurface moſtly covered with ſtones. Here ſome ants neſts were ſeen, compoſed of an amazing number of ſmall ſtones, which formed a circle of five or ſix feet diameter, riſing regularly in the center to the height of twenty

or thirty inches. An hour and a half's walking brought them to a ſwamp, where they ſtopped to fire at ſome ducks, and then croſſing it, they continued their courſe nearly weſt 8° north till eleven o'clock, when they came to a pool of good water.—The country was now ſandy, and preſently afterwards, they arrived on the borders of the river, and ſoon got to the place where they firſt ſtopped in the morning of the 12th. Several canoes being ſeen, our two natives were very deſirous of ſpeaking to the perſons in them, and the party were all deſired to hide themſelves in the graſs until the canoes ſhould come abreaſt of them; Colebe and Ballederry alſo concealed themſelves, but the canoes ſtopping on the oppoſite ſhore before they came near, one of our natives was told to call to them, which he did, and was ſoon anſwered by an old man, who, after a ſhort converſation, came over in his canoe, being known to Colebe.—This man joined the party without the leaſt fear; and from the queſtions that were put to him reſpecting the river, Colebe and Ballederry concluded they had come this journey in order to procure ſtone hatchets, as the natives get the ſtones whereof they make

make their hatchets from that part of the river near Richmond-Hill, which the old man ſaid was a great way off, and the road to it was very bad.

Colebe and Ballederry had at firſt ſuppoſed, that Governor Phillip and his party came from the ſettlement to kill ducks and patagorongs; but finding they did not ſtop at the places where thoſe animals were ſeen in any numbers, they were at a loſs to know why the journey was taken; and though they had hitherto behaved exceedingly well, yet, as they now began to be tired of a journey, which yielded them no ſort of advantage, they endeavoured to perſuade the governor to return, ſaying, it was a great way to the place where the ſtone hatchets were to be procured, and that they muſt come in a boat.

On the party leaving this place, the old native returned to his canoe, but he joined them ſoon afterwards, and gave Governor Phillip two ſtone hatchets, two ſpears, and a throwing-ſtick: this preſent was made in conſequence of our two natives telling him who all the party were. In return for the old man's preſent, he had ſome bread, ſome

fiſh-hooks, and a couple of ſmall hatchets given him. The ſpears were well made; one of them had a ſingle barb of wood fixed on with gum, the other had two large barbs cut out of the ſolid wood, and it was as finely brought to a point as if it had been made with the ſharpeſt inſtrument. The throwing-ſtick had a piece of hard ſtone fixed in gum inſtead of the ſhell which is commonly uſed by the natives who live on the ſea-coaſt: it is with theſe ſtones, which they bring to a very ſharp edge, that the natives make their ſpears. The old native followed our party in his canoe as they kept along the banks of the river, and another canoe, with a woman and child, joined him: the old man obſerving that they did not keep near enough the water's edge to have the leaſt fatigue in walking, came out of his canoe and took the lead, and he ſoon brought them to a path made by the natives, where it was very good walking, and which ran alongſide the river. It was near four o'clock when they ſtopped for the night, and were joined by a young man and a lively little boy, who they ſoon found intended, as well as the old man, to take up their reſidence with them, though their families were

on

on the oppoſite bank, and they had two fires lighted.

Though our natives appeared to be on very friendly terms with their new acquaintances, yet they certainly had no particular affection for them, and ſpoke of them very lightly when they were out of hearing: particularly Ballederry, who ſaid the youngeſt man of the two was bad: his name was *Yallah-mien-di*; they ſuppoſed him to be the old man's ſon, and the child to be his grandſon. The old man called himſelf *Go-me-bee-re*, and ſaid the child's name was *Yimbah*; they were of the tribe of *Bu-ru-be-rong-al*.

Colebe and Ballederry, in deſcribing that tribe on the ſecond day's journey, had called them *climbers of trees*, and men who lived by hunting; certainly, no perſons can better deſerve the appellation of climbers, if we may judge from what was ſeen of Go-me-bee-re, who, for a biſcuit, in a very few minutes cut his notches in the bark of a tree and mounted it with ſurpriſing agility, though an old man. Theſe notches are cut in the bark little more than an inch deep, which receives the ball of the great toe; the firſt and ſecond notches

are cut from the ground; the reſt they cut as they aſcend, and at ſuch a diſtance from each other, that when both their feet are in the notches, the right foot is raiſed nearly as high as the middle of the left thigh: when they are going to raiſe themſelves a ſtep, their hatchet is held in the mouth, in order to have the uſe of both their hands; and, when cutting the notch, the weight of the body reſts on the ball of the great toe: the fingers of the left hand are alſo fixed in a notch cut on the ſide of the tree for that purpoſe, if it is too large to admit their claſping it ſufficiently with the left arm to keep the body cloſe to the tree.—In this manner do theſe people climb trees, whoſe circumference is ten or fifteen feet, or upwards, after an opoſſum or a ſquirrel, though they riſe to the height of ſixty or eighty feet before there is a ſingle branch.

Governor Phillip had occaſionally ſeen a few of the natives climb the trees at Sydney and Roſe-Hill, but this old man greatly ſurpaſſed them. In the evening, the four natives and the child took their places at the fire, and a ſcene enſued which ſhews that theſe people are not a little ſuperſtitious.

Colebe

Colebe had been wounded below the left breaſt with a fiz-gig, and though it muſt have been done many years back, or the wound muſt have have been ſlight, as it was difficult to diſcover any ſcar, yet it was ſuppoſed he felt ſome pain, though it probably might be occaſioned by the ſtraps of his knapſack; however, the youngeſt of the two ſtrangers was applied to for relief.—He began the ceremony by taking a mouthful of water, which he ſquirted on the part affected, and then applying his mouth, he began to ſuck as long as he could without taking breath; this ſeemed to make him ſick, and when he roſe up, (for his patient was ſitting on the ground) he walked about for a few minutes, and then began to ſuck again, till it was again neceſſary for him to take breath: this was repeated three times, and he ſeemed, by drawing in his ſtomach, to feel the pain he had drawn from the breaſt of his patient; and having picked up a bit of ſtick or ſtone, which he did with ſo little caution that ſeveral of the party ſaw him, he pretended to take ſomething out of his mouth, and throw it into the river.—He certainly did throw ſomething away, which muſt be what he

picked up; but Colebe, after the ceremony was over, ſaid it was what he had ſucked from his breaſt, which ſome underſtood to be two barbs of a fiz-gig, as he made uſe of the word *Bul-ler-doo-ul*; but Governor Phillip was of opinion he meant two pains. Before this buſineſs was finiſhed, the doctor felt his patient's back below the ſhoulder, and ſeemed to apply his fingers as if he twitched ſomething out; after which, he ſat down by the patient, and put his right arm round his back; the old man, at the ſame time, ſat down on the other ſide the patient, with his face the contrary way, and claſped him round the breaſt with his right arm; each of them had hold of one of the patient's hands, in which ſituation they remained a few minutes; thus ended the ceremony, and Colebe ſaid he was well. He gave his worſted night-cap and the beſt part of his ſupper to the doctor as a fee; and being aſked, if both the men were doctors, he ſaid, yes, and the child was a doctor alſo; ſo that it may be preſumed the power of healing wounds deſcends from father to ſon.

This affair being finiſhed, moſt of the party fell aſleep, whilſt the two doctors were amuſed by

by Colebe and Ballederry, with an account of the buildings at Sydney and Roſe-Hill, and in what manner the coloniſts lived: in this hiſtory, names were as particularly attended to as if their hearers had been intimately acquainted with every perſon who was mentioned.

Having taken leave of their new friends the *Car-ra-dy-gans* (doctors), our party ſet off at a quarter paſt ſeven o'clock in the morning of the 15th of April, and followed the natives path along the banks of the river, walking at a good pace till a quarter paſt eight o'clock, when they came to a creek which was too wide to be croſſed by cutting down a tree, and was too deep to be forded; they were, therefore, obliged to follow its windings till they ſuppoſed themſelves at the head of it, and then they endeavoured to regain the banks of the river; but they preſently found that they had only rounded a ſmall arm of this creek, the principal branch of which they continued to trace with infinite fatigue for the remainder of the day.

It was high water in this creek at forty minutes paſt twelve o'clock, and at half paſt three, they found it divide into two branches, either

either of which might have been croſſed on a tree; but by this time the party were tired, and threatened with heavy rain, which would make their night very uncomfortable, as they had no tent; they therefore took up their reſidence at a ſpot where a quantity of timber, from trees, which had already been burnt down by the natives, promiſed them good fires with little labour.

The rain went off after a few light ſhowers, but our two natives began to grow quite impatient to return home. Colebe talked about his wife, and ſaid his child would cry; and Ballederry loſt all patience when the rain began, telling the governor, that there were good houſes at Sydney and Roſe-Hill, but that they had no houſe now, no fiſh, no melon (of which fruit all the natives are very fond); and there is no doubt but they would have left the party, had they been acquainted with the country through which they had to return. It was moſt likely that the greateſt part of the next day would be ſpent in getting to that part of the river which the creek had obliged them to quit, ſo that two days would be taken up in getting to the oppoſite ſide of a creek, not one hundred feet wide; it was, therefore,

therefore, determined to return to Roſe-Hill, which bore from the ſleeping place ſouth-eaſt, ſixteen miles diſtant.

The river which Governor Phillip had named the Nepean in a former excurſion, was then traced for ſome miles, and he expected to have fallen in with it this journey, and to have traced it down to where it empties itſelf into the Hawkeſbury, which it is ſuppoſed to do above Richmond-Hill: indeed, during the firſt day of this excurſion, he ſuppoſed it poſſible that the river they were then tracing might be the Nepean, but what they ſaw of it afterwards, left no doubt but that they had fallen in with the Hawkeſbury ſome miles below Richmond-Hill.

In the morning of the 16th of April, at half paſt ſeven o'clock, Governor Phillip and his party ſet off on their return to Roſe-Hill; and, as ſoon as they were clear of the creek, they went ſouth 40° eaſt, which they ſuppoſed would carry them into the path leading from Roſe-Hill to Proſpect-Hill.——The face of the country where they ſlept, and for ſeveral miles in their road, was a poor ſoil, but finely formed, and covered with the ſtately white gum-tree. At noon, they came to a hollow,

hollow, in which they found ſome very good water; here they ſtopped near an hour: after paſſing this gully, and a rocky piece of ground, the ſoil grew better, and they ſoon came to a brook of good water, which they had occaſion to croſs twice; the ſoil was good, and covered with long graſs: they were now drawing near to Roſe-Hill, where they arrived a little before four o'clock.

Two ſeamen, who had belonged to the Sirius, became ſettlers, and were fixed on the creek leading to Roſe-Hill, where they had ſixty acres of ground each allotted them, and they were to be victualled from the public ſtore for eighteen months. A perſon who was ſent from England to ſuperintend the labour of the convicts, alſo became a ſettler, and one hundred and forty acres of land were allotted him on the creek: he was allowed the labour of four convicts for a year, and himſelf and his daughter were to be victualled from the public ſtore for twelve months.—— Several convicts, whoſe terms for which they were ſentenced were expired, were permitted to cultivate ground at the foot of Proſpect-Hill, and to thoſe who became ſettlers, Governor Phillip gave what live ſtock he could ſpare,

ſpare, as there was not any belonging to the public in the ſettlement; nor were individuals poſſeſſed of any conſiderable quantity of live ſtock, the greateſt part having been killed the laſt year, when they were diſtreſſed for want of proviſions; and thoſe who were able to cultivate a little maize, were glad to make uſe of it as a ſubſtitute for bread.

In the beginning of May, the officers and men of the New South Wales corps went into the new barrack at Roſe-Hill. The barrack for the ſoldiers had been finiſhed ſome time, but one of the wings, which was intended for the officers, could not be compleated before the end of the month. Thoſe natives who had been moſt accuſtomed to live at the ſettlement, would now leave it frequently for ſeveral days together, as they found plenty of fiſh towards the head of the harbour. The ſavage ferocity of theſe people ſhews itſelf whenever they find themſelves thwarted. Bannelong and Colebe with their wives, dined at the governor's on the 8th of May, and came in as uſual, to have a glaſs of wine and a diſh of coffee; after which they left the houſe to go and ſleep at Bannelong's hut on the point; but, in the middle of the night,

night, Governor Phillip was called up by the cries of the young girl whom he had formerly reſcued from Bannelong: ſhe, it ſeems, had gone to ſleep in a ſhed at the back of the governor's houſe, and Bannelong, Colebe, and two others got over the paling, and were endeavouring to carry her off, which the centinels prevented; and, as Governor Phillip did not know at the moment, but that Bannelong and thoſe who were with him, had returned to ſleep in the yard after he went to bed, and before the gate was locked, they were permitted to eſcape; which, indeed, could only have been prevented by ordering them to be put to death.

One of theſe men was ſeen the next day, and, being taxed with attempting to carry off the girl, he denied the charge, as the natives always do when they are not caught in the fact. Bannelong and Colebe were not ſeen for a week, and the latter appearing firſt, when accuſed, ſaid he was aſleep at the time, and laid the blame on Bannelong, who coming ſoon after, and not being able to make any excuſe, or to deny being in the yard, appeared ſullen; and when Governor Phillip told him that he was angry, and

that

that the ſoldiers ſhould ſhoot him if he ever came again to take any woman away, he very cooly replied, that then he would ſpear the ſoldier; at the ſame time, he ſaid he was very hungry; and, as no advantage would have followed puniſhing him, he was ordered ſomething to eat, after the threat had been repeated of his being ſhot, if ever he came again in the night.

The girl was aſked if the natives were going to take her away in order to beat her, —ſhe ſaid no, it was to force her to ſleep with them; at the ſame time theſe men had left their own wives at their fires.

CHAPTER XIX.

A ſecond excurſion into the country.—The firſt grants of land to ſettlers.—A barter with the natives eſtabliſhed.—The arrival of ſeveral veſſels from England.

THE weather continuing dry, two officers (Tench and Dawes,) who were with Governor Phillip on his laſt excurſion, and

and two ſoldiers, ſet off in the beginning of June, 1791, to trace the Hawkeſbury, from the place where the former party were turned off by the creek: they got oppoſite Richmond-Hill on the 5th day after their departure, and were aſſiſted in croſſing the river by a native, who lent his canoe to one of the ſoldiers that could not ſwim; but they afterwards found the river ſo very ſhallow near the fall, that the water did not reach above the ancles. It has already been obſerved, that when the floods come down from the mountains, the flat country near the head of the Hawkſbury is, in many places, under water, and the river, in that part, riſes to a great height.——It now appeared that the Nepean does, as was ſuppoſed, empty itſelf into the Hawkeſbury; and, in Governor Phillip's opinion, the fall and the ſudden contraction of that noble river are very ſufficient reaſons for confining its name from where it empties itſelf into Broken-Bay up to the fall; and for continuing the name given to the river (Nepean) which was diſcovered in going weſtward from Proſpect-Hill.

The buildings at Roſe-Hill being carried on ſo far as to form hereafter a regular town between

between Roſe-Hill and the landing-place in the creek, Governor Phillip named it *Parramatta*; the name given by the natives to the ſpot on which the town was building. Grants of land were now given to thoſe who became ſettlers; and thoſe who had been permitted to clear ground in their leiſure hours, and on one day of the week which was allowed them for that purpoſe, went on very well.

The grants which had already been made, were, to James Ruſe, thirty acres, which is called in the grant *Experiment Farm:* to Philip Schaffer, who came from England as a ſuperintendant, one hundred and forty acres; called in the grant, the *Vineyard:* to Robert Webb and William Reid, who were ſeamen, lately belonging to the Sirius, ſixty acres each, and which were called in the grants, *Webb* and *Reid's Farms.*

On the 4th of June, the anniverſary of his Majeſty's birth-day was celebrated, and, on this occcaſion, an addition was made to the daily ratio of proviſions; a pound of pork and a pound of rice were given to each man, half that quantity to every woman, and a quarter of a pound of pork and half a pound of rice to every child.

A ſoldier of the New South Wales corps, going from Parramatta with ſome of his comrades for the purpoſe of procuring ſweet tea, left them to go after a pattegorong, and loſt himſelf in the woods: after roving about for ſome time, he ſaw a number of the natives, who fled on ſeeing his gun, except one that had frequently viſited the ſettlement, and was known by the name of *Botany-Bay Colebe*. This man joined the ſoldier, and was followed by one of his companions; the ſoldier, to gain their good-will, and in hopes of inducing them to ſhew him the way to Parramatta, offered them ſome of his cloaths, which were not accepted; he made them underſtand where he wanted to go, but they were on the point of leaving him till he offered his gun, which the native, who was known at the ſettlement, took, and then conducted him to Sydney; making him underſtand that Parramatta was a great way off.

When they drew near to Sydney, Colebe returned the ſoldier his gun, and, bidding him tell *Beanah*, (the governor) that he was *Botany-Bay Colebe*, he left him, without even taking what the ſoldier had firſt offered him as a preſent.

As

As the natives frequently caught more fiſh than was neceſſary for their own immediate uſe, and ſuch of them as had lived amongſt the coloniſts, were very fond of bread, rice, and vegetables; ſome pains had been taken to make them carry the ſurplus of what fiſh they caught near the head of the harbour, to Parramatta, and exchange it for bread, &c. Several of them had carried on this traffic lately, and Governor Phillip had reaſon to hope that a pretty good fiſh-market would be eſtabliſhed the enſuing ſummer.——Amongſt thoſe who thus bartered their fiſh, was a young man that had lived ſome months with the governor, but had left him from time to time in order to go a fiſhing: his canoe was a new one, and the firſt he had ever been maſter of, ſo that it may be ſuppoſed he ſet no ſmall value on it.

Strict orders had been given, that the natives' canoes ſhould never be touched, and the intereſt which both the ſoldier and the convict had in inducing them to bring their fiſh, which they exchanged for a very ſmall quantity of bread or rice, would, it might have been ſuppoſed, have ſecured them from inſult; but this barter had not been carried on many

days, when the young man juſt mentioned, came to Governor Phillip's hut at Parramatta in a violent rage, ſaid the white men had broke his canoe, and he would kill them: he had his throwing-ſtick and ſeveral ſpears, and his hair, face, arms, and breaſt were painted red, which is a ſign of great anger; it was with ſome difficulty that he was made to promiſe not to kill a white man; which he at length did, on the governor's telling him, that he would kill thoſe who deſtroyed his canoe. A ſhort time afterwards, the villains were diſcovered and puniſhed: they were convicts, and the young native ſaw the puniſhment inflicted, yet it was thought neceſſary to tell him that one of the offenders had been hanged, with which he appeared to be ſatisfied; but, whilſt theſe men were under examination, his behaviour ſhewed, that he thought it belonged to him to puniſh the injury he had received; and three weeks after the loſs of his canoe, when every one thought he was ſufficiently repaid for his misfortune by ſeveral little articles, which Governor Phillip had given him, by his ſeeing the aggreſſor puniſhed, and by his ſuppoſing one of them had been put to death, he

he took his revenge; which confirmed the general opinion, that theſe people do not readily forgive an injury until they have puniſhed the aggreſſor. A convict, who ſtrayed ſome diſtance from the ſettlement, was met by two young native men, a woman, and two children, who paſſed by him, but immediately afterwards he was wounded in the back with a ſpear; ſeveral ſpears were thrown at him, and he received a ſecond wound in the ſide; however, he got away; and as it did not appear that the natives followed him to get his cloaths, or attempted to take any thing from him, there was no doubt but the canoe being deſtroyed was the cauſe of this attack; eſpecially as the ſame evening, when Governor Phillip was returning from Parramatta to Sydney, he ſaw ſome natives aſſembled round a fire, and aſking them who it was that wounded the white man, he was immediately anſwered, *Balle-derry*; (the owner of the canoe which had been deſtroyed) he was alſo told the name of the young man who was with him, and of the women and children: indeed, it is not a little extraordinary, that theſe people always tell the names of thoſe who have

thrown a ſpear, or who have ſtole any thing, if the queſtion is aſked them, though they know that you intend to puniſh the offenders; and it cannot be from a principle of ſtrictly adhering to truth; for, ſhould one of them be charged with doing any thing wrong, he is ſure to deny it, and to lay the blame on another who is not preſent; and it is not only ſurpriſing that they ſhould always tell the name of the offender, but that they do it openly; nay, often in the hearing of women and children. The deſtruction of this canoe was very unfortunate, as it was likely to prevent the natives carrying up their fiſh to barter; and no canoe was ſeen in the creek for ſome time afterwards. Ballederry, the owner of the canoe, was one whom Governor Phillip had hopes of attaching to himſelf, and intended bringing him to England.

On the 9th of July, our coloniſts had the pleaſure of ſeeing the ſignal made for a ſail, and the next day, the Mary Ann tranſport anchored in the cove, having on board one hundred and forty-one women, and ſix children, all very healthy, ſome few excepted, who had diſorders which were contracted in England,

England, and only three perſons died on the paſſage.

By this ſhip our coloniſts received ſome ſtores, and nine months proviſions for the women who came in her: they had alſo the ſatisfaction of hearing that the Gorgon, whoſe arrival had been expected for twelve months back, was ſafe, and was to ſail for the colony a week after the Mary Ann.

Two pounds of rice were now added to the weekly ratio of proviſions, the ſtores not admitting a greater addition; for though an ample ſupply of proviſions might reaſonably be expected by the middle of the enſuing month, yet their ſituation did not admit their truſting to the various accidents, which had hitherto been ſo very unfavourable to the colony: however, they were now convinced, that from the plan propoſed by government for furniſhing the ſettlement with proviſions until it could ſupport itſelf, there was no reaſon to fear in future thoſe inconveniencies which they had already laboured under.

In the night of the 16th of July, a ſerjeant, going the rounds, found the door of the ſpirit cellar open, and the centinel in the cellar, drawing off wine: this man, being ordered

for trial, offered himſelf as an evidence for the crown, and charged two of his comrades with having frequently robbed the ſtore, of which there was not the leaſt doubt: however, the only evidence againſt theſe men being that of an accomplice, it was not ſufficient to convict them, and he ſaved his own life by being admitted as an evidence for the crown. He was afterwards tried by a battalion court-martial, (as being a marine, he could not be tried by a general court-martial) and ſentenced to receive corporal puniſhment, and to be drummed out of the corps. The men he had accuſed were the two who had been charged with robbing the ſtore at Roſe-Hill, by one of thoſe marines who ſuffered death for robbing the ſtore at Sydney in 1788, at which time, likewiſe, they eſcaped, the only evidence againſt them being an accomplice under ſentence of death.

It being the intention of government, that as the time for which the convicts were ſentenced, expired, they ſhould be permitted to become ſettlers; thoſe who choſe to accept this bounty were received as ſuch, and lands were granted them in the following proportion; viz. thirty acres to the ſingle men, fifty

fifty acres to thoſe who were married, and ten acres more for every child. It had been propoſed to victual and cloath them from the public ſtore for twelve months, from the time they became ſettlers; but to encourage thoſe who firſt offered themſelves, Governor Phillip promiſed to cloath and ſupport them for eighteen months from the public ſtores: they were to have the neceſſary tools and implements of huſbandry, with ſeeds and grain to ſow the ground the firſt year; two young ſow pigs were alſo to be given to each ſettler, which was all the governor's ſtock would afford, and it has already been obſerved, that they had no live ſtock in the ſettlement belonging to the crown. On theſe conditions, twenty-ſeven convicts were admitted ſettlers; twelve of them were fixed at the foot of Proſpect-Hill, four miles from Parramatta; and fifteen at ſome ponds, an eligible ſituation about two miles to the northward of thoſe ſettlers who were placed on the creek leading to Parramatta.

In laying out the different allotments, an intermediate ſpace, equal to what was granted the ſettler, was retained between every two allotments, for the benefit of the crown; and

and as this ſet them at ſome diſtance from each other, and there being a wood between every two ſettlers, in which the natives might conceal themſelves, if they were inclined to miſchief, ſeveral muſquets were diſtributed amongſt the ſettlers, and they took poſſeſſion of their allotments on the 18th of July, and began to erect their huts: however, very few days elapſed before a large body of the natives appeared in the grounds of one of the new ſettlers at Proſpect-Hill, who, alarmed at the ſight of a number of natives, (by his account more than a hundred) fired off his muſquet and retreated; this, of courſe, encouraged them, and they advanced, and ſet fire to his hut, which was nearly finiſhed.—On hearing the report of a muſquet, another ſettler took up his arms, and running to the ſpot, fired on the natives, who retired to ſome diſtance.

As ſoon as this affair was known at Parramatta, a party of ſoldiers were detached, who, getting ſight of about fifty of the natives, obliged them to diſperſe. This circumſtance induced Governor Phillip to deviate from the royal inſtructions, which pointed out in what manner the allotments of land were to be made; and as the only means of enabling the

ſettlers

ſettlers to defend themſelves againſt ſimilar accidents, he granted all thoſe intermediate lands which had been reſerved for the uſe of the crown, to the ſettlers: by this means, all the land would be cleared of timber, ſo that the natives could find no ſhelter, and, in all probability, there would be little danger from them in future: however, a non-commiſſioned officer and three privates were detached to each ſettlement, with orders to remain there until the lands were cleared. In making this arrangement, no additional ground was given to the ſettler, but their allotments were brought more into a ſquare, and the ground not occupied at preſent, would be granted to others in future. When theſe ſettlers were placed at ſuch a diſtance from Parramatta, it was on account of the ſoil being good, and that their live ſtock and gardens might not be ſo liable to depredations as they would have been if nearer the town.

Ballederry, the young native who abſented himſelf after wounding a man, in revenge for ſome of the convicts having deſtroyed his canoe, had lately made ſeveral enquiries by his friends, whether Governor Phillip was ſtill angry; and they were always told

told in anſwer to thoſe enquiries, that he was angry, and that Ballederry ſhould be killed for wounding a white man; yet this did not deter him from coming into the cove in a canoe, and the governor being informed of it, ordered a party of ſoldiers to go and ſecure him: but Bannelong, who was preſent at the time, ſeeing the ſoldiers go towards the point, gave him the alarm, and he went off. Governor Phillip was in the garden at the time Bannelong was talking to the young man who was in his canoe going out of the cove, and gave him to underſtand, that Ballederry ſhould be killed; on which, he immediately called to him, and ſaid, the governor was ſtill very angry: Ballederry, on hearing this, went off pretty briſkly to the other ſide of the harbour, but, in anſwer to the threats of puniſhment, ſpears were mentioned, though he was then at ſo great a diſtance that the governor could not diſtinguiſh whether it was himſelf or the ſoldiers which he threatened: certain it is, that theſe people ſet little value on their lives, and never fail to repay you in kind, whether you praiſe or threaten; and whenever a blow is given them,

them, be it gentle or with force, they always return it in the ſame manner.

On the 23d of Auguſt a number of natives viſited the ſettlement, and ſix men, with ſeven or eight and twenty women and children came to Governor Phillip's houſe; amongſt whom ſome bread was dividing, when he was informed that Ballederry was on the oppoſite ſide of the cove, with a number of the natives, and that he was armed, as were moſt of his companions. Whether his coming in, after what had paſſed, proceeded from an opinion that Governor Phillip would not puniſh him, or from ſuppoſing himſelf ſafe whilſt ſurrounded by ſo many of his countrymen, it was thought neceſſary to order him to be ſeized, as ſoon as thoſe who were then in the yard eating what had been given them ſhould be gone; for, as Ballederry could not be taken without their hearing the diſpute, it was probable they would ſuppoſe themſelves in danger, and make uſe of their ſpears againſt thoſe who were treating them with kindneſs; in which caſe ſome of them muſt have ſuffered; indeed, this was the more likely to happen, as ſeveral of theſe men and

women

women were ſtrangers, who had now come to Sydney for the firſt time.

This party were going to dance at Botany-Bay, and, having finiſhed their meal, and received ſome fiſh-hooks, they ſet off; immediately after which, a party of ſoldiers were ordered out to ſecure Ballederry; but before they got ſight of him, the boy Nanbarre had heard what was going forward and left the place: on this, a ſerjeant with a party were ſent after him; they came up with ſeveral natives, who joined them in a friendly manner, and, whilſt they were talking to the ſerjeant, one of them attempted to wreſt a firelock from a ſoldier, and immediately afterwards a ſpear was thrown, ſuppoſed to be by Ballederry. Two muſquets were then fired, by which a native was wounded in the leg; but unfortunately it was neither the man who attempted to take the muſquet, nor the perſon who threw the ſpear.—Soon afterwards, the natives were ſaid to be aſſembled near the brick-fields; an officer was therefore ordered out with a ſtrong party to diſperſe them, and to make a ſevere example of them, if any ſpears were thrown; but they never ſaw a native, for the boy Nanbarre,

true

true to his countrymen, on ſeeing the ſoldiers form on the parade, ran into the woods, and ſtripping himſelf, that he might not be known, joined the natives, and put them on their guard; after which, he returned, and ſeeing the governor go paſt with ſome officers, whilſt he was hid in a buſh, he afterwards ſhewed himſelf to an officer's ſervant, and aſked where the governor and the ſoldiers were going, and being told, he laughed, and ſaid they were too late, for the natives were all gone.

Bannelong came in ſoon afterwards with his wife, and though he was told that the ſoldiers were gone out to puniſh Ballederry for wounding a white man, yet this intelligence did not prevent him from eating a hearty dinner; and when he was going away, he left a large bundle of ſpears, fiz-gigs, and various other articles under Governor Phillip's care.

Bannelong's wife was now very near her time, which gave our coloniſts an opportunity of ſeeing the preparations the women of New South Wales make on theſe occaſions: ſhe had two nets hanging from her neck, one of which being new, Governor Phillip was deſirous of obtaining, and it was given him, after

after ſhe had taken a large piece of the bark of the tea-tree out of it, nicely folded up, and which was intended to lay her infant upon; this ſeems to be the only preparation, which is made by lying-in women in that country.

The bark of the tea-tree is thick in proportion to the ſize of the tree, and is compoſed of a great number of layers of very thin bark, in appearance not unlike the bark of the birch-tree; but it is ſo very ſoft, that nothing this country affords can be better calculated for the purpoſe for which it was intended: Bannelong, however, deſired to have a blanket for the child, which was given him, and the next day, a net made in the Engliſh manner, which appeared more acceptable to his wife than the one ſhe had parted with. He told Governor Phillip that his wife intended doing him the honour of being brought to bed in his houſe; but the governor at length perſuaded him that ſhe would be better accommodated at the hoſpital.

The women do not appear to ſuffer any great inconvenience, while in this ſtate, and they all ſeem beſt pleaſed with having boys: Bannelong often ſaid his was to be a ſon.

A num-

A number of emu's had been ſeen lately, and this appears to be the ſeaſon in which they breed, as a neſt was found near ſome freſh water, at the head of the harbour, containing fourteen eggs. The neſt was compoſed of fern, but it had more the appearance of a quantity of fern collected for a perſon to ſit on, than a neſt. Soon after taking theſe eggs, an old emu was ſeen near Proſpect-Hill with ſome young ones; ſeveral of the ſettlers chaſed them, and the young birds were taken: they did not appear to be more than a week old, and great pains were taken to rear them, but they died, after being in Governor Phillip's poſſeſſion near five weeks.

Notice has already been taken of thoſe perſons who became ſettlers; however, a liſt of their names may not, perhaps, be unacceptable.

Philip Schaffer, Robert Webb, William Reid, Robert Watſon, John Drummond, James Proctor, Peter Hibbs, Owen Cavenaugh, James Painter, William Mitchell, William Hambly, Charles Heritage, Samuel King, William Mitchell, Thomas Bramwell, Thomas Biſhop, John M'Carthy, Lawrence

Richards, John Munday, Thomas Chipp, William Strong, James M'Manus, Thomas O'Bryen, Richard Knight, Abraham Hand, William Dempſey, Thomas Sculley, John Barrisford, James Redmond, William Tonks, Thomas Halfpenny, William Standley, John Gowen, Thomas Dukes, James Williams, Daniel Standfield, John Roberts, William Simms, John Foley, Patrick Connell, John Redman, Thomas Spencer, John Scott, James Ruſe, Charles Williams, James Stuart, George Liſk, William Kilby, William Butler, John Nicholls, John Ramſay, Mathew Everingham, John Summers, John Richards, William Field, Joſeph Biſhop, Curtis Brand, John Silverthorn, Thomas Martin, Samuel Griffiths, James Caſtles, Joſeph Morley, William Hubbard, John Anderſon, William Elliott, Joſeph Marſhall, Edward Varndell, Simon Burn, John Brown, William Moulds, John Baffen, John Williams, Edward Pugh, William Pariſh, Robert Forreſter, James White, William Croſs, James Walbourne, Benjamin Fentum, Peter Woodcock, Edward Kimberley, John Welch, William Bell, John Turner, Thomas Kelley, William Parr, John Herbert.

CHAPTER XX.

Arrival of the Gorgon, and ſeveral tranſports at Port Jackſon.—The number of convicts brought out in theſe veſſels.—A whale-fiſhery eſtabliſhed on the coaſt of New South Wales.

ON the 21ſt of September, 1791, the Gorgon, Captain John Parker, came into the harbour. She ſailed from Spithead on the 15th of the preceding March, had ſtopped at Teneriffe, St. Jago, and the Cape of Good Hope; and having received on board as much of the proviſions and ſtores, which were of the Guardian's cargo, as the ſhip could ſtow, together with three bulls, twenty-three cows, four rams, ſixty-two ewes, and one boar; ſhe left the Cape on the 30th of July. Captain King returned in this ſhip, his Majeſty having been pleaſed to give him the rank of maſter and commander in the navy, with a commiſſion as Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Iſland, in conſideration of his uſeful ſervices.

The chaplain of the New South Wales corps, and ſeveral who were appointed to civil employments, came out likewiſe in the Gorgon, and as ſhe was to bring out ſtores and proviſions, her lower deck guns were left in England, and her complement reduced to one hundred men. Of the cattle received on board the Gorgon, at the Cape of Good Hope, three bulls, ſix cows, three rams, and nine ewes died on the paſſage; one cow died ſoon after landing, and the ewes were ſeverely afflicted with the ſcab, but it was hoped they would ſoon recover: the bulls all dying was an unfortunate circumſtance; however, our coloniſts had a bull calf and patience ſtill left. Seed and a variety of fruit-trees in good condition were likewiſe received by the Gorgon; and when ſhe left the Cape, five tranſports were preparing to leave it for this colony. Thirty male convicts were on board the Gorgon, and aſſiſted in working the ſhip, her complement as a ſtore-ſhip being only one hundred men, officers included. On the 26th of September, the Queen tranſport, having Lieutenant Blow on board as an agent, arrived from Ireland with proviſions, and one hundred and twenty-ſix male, and twenty-

one

one female convicts: ſeven male convicts and one female died on the paſſage.

The Active tranſport arrived the ſame day with proviſions, and one hundred and fifty-four male convicts: both theſe ſhips brought a part of the Guardian's cargo from the Cape of Good Hope, and detachments from the New South Wales corps.

The weather was ſhowery, and the gardens began to promiſe plenty of vegetables; the wheat alſo, which, it was feared, would have been loſt by the long continuance of dry weather, improved greatly in appearance: nearly all the maize was put into the ground, and the greater part of it was up. The weather had lately been very unſettled, but better than what Governor Phillip ever found it in the Brazils at this ſeaſon of the year.

The ſurgeon's return of ſick was greatly increaſed ſince the arrival of the laſt veſſels; for though the number of ſick convicts were not conſiderable when landed from the ſhips, they were, in general, greatly emaciated, and appeared ſtarved, and worn out with confinement. The return of ſick on the 1ſt of October was three hundred and four convicts. One ſoldier, fifteen male, and one female convict, with three children, died in the laſt

month; and two convicts were loſt in the woods.

The Albemarle tranſport, Lieutenant R. P. Young as agent, arrived on the 13th, and the Britannia came in the next day: the Albemarle brought out twenty-three ſoldiers and one woman of the New South Wales corps, two hundred and fifty male, and ſix female convicts, one free woman, a convict's wife and one child. Thirty-two male convicts died on the paſſage, and forty-four were ſick on their arrival. The Britannia brought out thirteen ſoldiers, one woman, and three children of the New South Wales corps, and one hundred and twenty-nine male convicts. One ſoldier and twenty-one convicts died on the paſſage, and thirty-eight were ſick when landed.

The convicts on board the Albemarle, during the paſſage, attempted to ſeize on the ſhip, and the ringleader, having knocked down a centinel, and ſeized his ſword, got on the quarter-deck, and was going to kill the ſeaman at the helm; but the maſter of the ſhip, hearing a noiſe, took up a blunderbuſs, which was loaded, and diſcharged it at the villain, who finding himſelf wounded, dropped

dropped the ſword and ran away. Many of the convicts had got their irons off, and were ruſhing aft for the quarter-deck; but, on ſeeing their leader wounded, they ran forward and hid themſelves, ſo that the whole buſineſs was put an end to in a few minutes. After a ſhort converſation among the officers, two of the ringleaders were hanged, and two ſeamen, who had furniſhed the convicts with knives, and who were to have conducted the ſhip to America after all the officers and ſhip's company, with the ſoldiers, had been put to death, were landed at Madeira, in order that they might be ſent to England: they were both Americans, and one of them had a ſuperficial knowledge of navigation.

The Admiral Barrington arrived on the 16th of October. This ſhip brought out a captain, three non-commiſſioned officers, and twenty-four privates of the New South Wales corps, with two hundred and ſixty-four male convicts: four women came out with their huſbands, who were convicts, and two children. Ninety-ſeven were ſick on board this ſhip.

The whole number of convicts embarked on board the ten tranſports, including thirty

in the Gorgon, were one thouſand ſix hundred and ninety-five males, ſixty-eight females, and eleven children; of whom, one hundred and ninety-four males, four females, and one child died on the paſſage.

What proviſions were in the ſtore, added to thoſe which were brought out in theſe tranſports, would not furniſh many months proviſions for this colony; Governor Phillip, therefore, took the Atlantic into the ſervice as a naval tranſport.

The Lieutenant-Governor of Norfolk Iſland, Captain Paterſon, of the New South Wales corps, with part of his company, twenty-nine marines who had been diſcharged to become ſettlers; ſeveral convicts, whoſe time of tranſportation being expired, were admitted as ſettlers, with thirty-three male, and twelve female convicts, and a conſiderable quantity of ſtores and proviſions were embarked on board the Atlantic, for Norfolk Iſland, under the direction of Lieutenant Bowen, as naval agent; who, after landing what he had on board for the iſland, had orders to proceed to Calcutta, where he was to load with proviſions for the colony.

The

The great number of ſpermaceti whales that had been ſeen on the coaſt of New South Wales, induced the maſters of thoſe veſſels which were fitted out for that fiſhery, and intended, after landing the convicts, to proceed to the north-weſt coaſt of America, to try for a cargo here: indeed, the maſter of the Britannia, a veſſel belonging to Meſſieurs Enderbys, of London, who have the merit of being the firſt that adventured to the South Seas for whales, aſſured Governor Phillip, that he had ſeen more ſpermaceti whales in his paſſage from the ſouth cape to Port Jackſon, than he had ever ſeen on the Brazil coaſt, although he had been ſix years on that fiſhery.

No time was loſt by the maſters of theſe ſhips in getting ready for ſea: the Britannia ſailed on the 25th of October, in company with the William and Ann: the Mary Ann and the Matilda ſailed the day before, and the Salamander ſailed on the 1ſt of November. The Britannia returned from her cruize on the 10th of November, being the firſt ſhip which had ever fiſhed for whales on the coaſt of New South Wales.

The

The following letter from the Maſter of the Britannia, to Meſſrs. Enderbys, his owners, we ſubjoin for the reader's ſatisfaction, becauſe it ſhews the firſt introduction of a whale fiſhery on the coaſt of New South Wales.

Ship Britannia, Sydney, Port-Jackſon, November 29, 1791.

Meſſrs. Sam. Enderby and Sons,

Gentlemen,

" I have the pleaſure to inform you of our ſafe arrival in Port Jackſon, in New South Wales, October 13, after a paſſage of fifty-five days from the Cape of Good Hope. We were only ſix weeks from the Cape to Van Diemen's Land, but met with contrary winds after we doubled Van Diemen's Land, which made our paſſage longer than I expected. We parted company with our agent the next day after we left the Cape of Good Hope, and never ſaw him again till we arrived at Port-Jackſon, both in one day. The Albemarle and we ſailed much alike. The Admiral Barrington arrived three days after us. I am very well myſelf, thank God, and all the crew are in high ſpirits. We loſt in all on

our

our paſſage from England, twenty-one convicts, and one ſoldier. We had one birth on our paſſage from the Cape. I tried to make, and made the iſland of Amſterdam, and made it in the longitude of 76° 4′ 14″ eaſt from Greenwich, by a good lunar obſervation: my intention was to run cloſe to it to diſcover whether the ſealing buſineſs might not have been carried on there; but the weather was ſo bad, and thick weather coming on, I did not think it prudent to attempt it, likewiſe to loſe a night's run, and a fair wind blowing. The day before we made it we ſaw two ſhoals of ſperm whales. After we doubled the ſouth-weſt cape of Van Diemen's Land, we ſaw a large ſperm whale off Maria's-Iſlands, but did not ſee any more, being very thick weather and blowing hard, till within fifteen leagues of the latitude of Port Jackſon. Within three leagues of the ſhore, we ſaw ſperm whales in great plenty: we ſailed through different ſhoals of them from twelve o'clock in the day till after ſunſet, all round the horizon, as far as I could ſee from the maſt-head: in fact, I ſaw a very great proſpect in making our fiſhery upon this coaſt and eſtabliſhing a fiſhery here. Our people were in the higheſt ſpirits at ſo great

great a ſight, and I was determined, as ſoon as I got in and got clear of my live lumber, to make all poſſible diſpatch on the fiſhery on this coaſt.

" On our arrival here, I waited upon his Excellency Governor Phillip, and delivered my letters to him. I had the mortification to find he wanted to diſpatch me with my convicts to Norfolk-Iſland, and likewiſe wanted to purchaſe our veſſel to ſtay in the country, which I refuſed to do. I immediately told him the ſecret of ſeeing the whales, thinking that would get me off going to Norfolk-Iſland, that there was a proſpect of eſtabliſhing a fiſhery here, and might be of ſervice to the colony, and left him. I waited upon him two hours afterwards with a box directed to him: he took me into a private room, he told me he had read my letters, and that he would render me every ſervice that lay in his power; that next morning he would diſpatch every long-boat in the fleet to take our convicts out, and take our ſtores out immediately, which he did accordingly, and did every thing to diſpatch us on the fiſhery. Captain King uſed all his intereſt in the buſineſs; he gave his kind reſpects to you. The

ſecret

ſecret of ſeeing whales our ſailors could not keep from the reſt of the whalers here, the news put them all to the ſtir, but have the pleaſure to ſay, we were the firſt ſhip ready for ſea; notwithſtanding they had been ſome of them a month arrived before us. We went out in company with the William and Ann, the eleventh day after our arrival. The next day after we went out, we had very bad weather, and fell in with a very great number of ſperm whales. At ſun-riſing in the morning, we could ſee them all round the horizon. We run through them in different bodies till two o'clock in the afternoon, when the weather abated a little, but a very high ſea running. I lowered away two boats, and Bunker followed the example; in leſs than two hours we had ſeven whales killed, but unfortunately a heavy gale came on from the ſouth-weſt, and took the ſhip aback with a ſquall, that the ſhip could only fetch two of them, the reſt we were obliged to cut from, and make the beſt of our way on board to ſave the boats and crew. The William and Anne ſaved one, and we took the other and rode by them all night with a heavy gale of wind. Next morning it moderated, and we took her in;

ſhe

ſhe made us twelve barrels. We ſaw large whales next day, but were not able to lower away our boats; we ſaw whales every day for a week after, but the weather being ſo bad, we could not attempt to lower a boat down: we cruized fifteen days in all, having left our ſixty ſhakes of butts on ſhore with the Gorgon's cooper, to ſet up in our abſence, which Captain Parker was ſo kind as to let us have, and wanting to purchaſe more caſks of Mr. Calvert's ſhips, and having no proſpect of getting any good weather, I thought it moſt prudent to come in and refit the ſhip, and compleat my caſks and fill my water, and by that time the weather would be more moderate. The day after we came in, the Mary-Ann came in off a cruize, having met with very bad weather, ſhipped a ſea, and waſhed her try-works overboard. He informed me, he left the Matilda in a harbour to the northward, and that the Salamander had killed a forty barrel whale, and loſt her by bad weather. There is nothing againſt making a voyage on this coaſt but the weather, which I expect will be better next month; I think to make another month's trial of it. If a voyage can be got upon this coaſt, it will make

make it ſhorter than going to Peru: and the governor has been very attentive in ſending greens for refreſhment to our crew at different times. Captain Parker has been kind, and has given me every aſſiſtance that lay in his power; he carries our long-boat home, as we cannot ſell her here: he will diſpoſe of her for you, or leave her at Portſmouth: he will wait upon you on his arrival in London. Captain Ball, of the Supply, who is the bearer of this letter, has likewiſe been very kind, and rendered us every ſervice that lay in his power; he will wait upon you likewiſe.

The colony is all alive, expecting there will be a rendezvous for the fiſhermen. We ſhall be ready to ſail on Tueſday the 22d, on a cruize. The Matilda has ſince arrived here; ſhe ſaw the Salamander four days ago: ſhe had ſeen more whales, but durſt not lower their boats down: ſhe has been into harbour twice. We have the pleaſure to ſay, we killed the firſt four whales on this coaſt. I have encloſed you the certificates for the convicts, and receipts for the ſtores. Captain Nepean has paid every attention to me, and has been ſo kind as to let us have a cooper:

he dines with me to-morrow. I am collecting ſome beautiful birds, and land animals, and other curioſities for you. The ſhip remains tight and ſtrong, and in good condition. I will write you by the Gorgon man of war; ſhe ſails in about a month or ſix week's time.

I am, Sirs,

Your humble Servant,

THOMAS MELVILLE.

The Matilda and the Mary-Ann tranſports returned from their fiſhing-cruize on the 10th of November. Theſe veſſels had run to the ſouthward in ſearch of ſeals, and met with very bad weather, but ſaw no fiſh. The Matilda had put into Jervis-Bay, which, according to the maſter's account, is a very fine harbour, the anchorage very good, and capable of receiving the largeſt ſhips. Theſe two veſſels, after refitting, ſailed again to try for fiſh on this coaſt.

Our coloniſts began to reap the barley on the 22d of November, and the wheat was getting ripe.

From the debilitated ſtate in which many of the convicts were landed from the laſt ſhips,

ſhips, the number of ſick were greatly increaſed; the ſurgeon's returns on the 27th, being upwards of four hundred ſick at Parramatta; and the ſame day medicines were diſtributed to one hundred and ninety-two at Sydney. To the number of ſick at Parramatta, upwards of one hundred may be added, who were ſo weak that they could not be put to any kind of labour, not even to that of pulling graſs for thatching the huts. Forty-two convicts died in the month of November, and in theſe people nature ſeemed fairly to be worn out; many of them were ſo thoroughly exhauſted that they expired without a groan, and apparently without any kind of pain.

Showers of rain had been more frequent lately than for many months paſt, but not in the abundance which the ground required; and, from the extreme dryneſs of the weather, and from the ground not being ſufficiently worked before the maize was put into it, a great number of acres were likely to be deſtroyed. This was one of the many inconveniencies the ſettlement laboured under, from the want of people to employ in agri-

culture, who would feel themſelves intereſted in the labour of thoſe that were under their direction, and who had ſome knowledge as farmers.

The following parcels of land were in cultivation at Parramatta, in November, 1791.

Acres.	Roods.	Perches.	
351	2	5	in Maiſe.
44	1	8	Wheat.
6	1	30	Barley.
1	0	0	Oats.
2	0	3	Potatoes.
4	2	0	Not cultivated, but cleared.
4	2	15	Moſtly planted with vines.
6	0	0	The governor's garden, partly ſown with maize and wheat.
80	0	0	Garden-ground belonging to individuals.
17	0	0	Land in cultivation by the New South Wales corps.
150	0	0	Cleared, and to be ſowed with turnips.
91	3	2	Ground in cultivation by ſettlers.
28	0	0	Ground in cultivation by officers of the civil and military.
134	0	0	Incloſed, and the timber thinned for feeding cattle.

The

The above grounds were meaſured by David Burton, the public gardener, who obſerves, that the ſoil in moſt places is remarkably good, and only wants cultivation to be fit for any uſe, for the ground that has been the longeſt in cultivation bears the beſt crops.

Of the convicts who were received by the laſt ſhips, there were great numbers of the worſt of characters, particularly amongſt thoſe who came from Ireland, and whoſe great ignorance led them into ſchemes more deſtructive to themſelves than they were likely to be to the ſettlement. Some of theſe people had formed an idea that they could go along the coaſt, and ſubſiſt on oyſters and other ſhell-fiſh, till they reached ſome of the Chineſe ſettlements: others had heard that there were a copper coloured people only one hundred and fifty miles to the northward, where they would be free.——Full of theſe notions, three parties ſet off; but, after ſtraggling about for many days, ſeveral of them were taken, and others returned to the ſettlement. Governor Phillip was leſs inclined to inflict any puniſhment on theſe people, than to puniſh thoſe who had deceived them by the information of "not being far from ſome of

the Chineſe ſettlements, and near people who would receive them, and where they would have every thing they wanted, and live very happy:" theſe reaſons moſt of them aſſigned for going into the woods, and where ſome of them ſtill remained, dreading a ſevere puniſhment if they returned: a general pardon was therefore promiſed to all thoſe who came back within a certain time, as ſeveral were ſuppoſed to be lurking in the wood near the ſettlement; however, ſome of theſe wretches were ſo prepoſſeſſed with the idea of being able to live in the woods and on the ſea-coaſt until they could reach a ſettlement, or find a people who would maintain them without labour, that ſeveral who were brought in when almoſt famiſhed, and carried to the hoſpital, went away again as ſoon as they were judged able to return to their labour; and although what would be called a day's work in England is very ſeldom done by any convict in the ſettlement, yet ſome of them declared that they would ſooner periſh in the woods than be obliged to work; and forty were now abſent. In order to give thoſe who might be ſtill lurking near the ſettlement an opportunity of returning, all the convicts were aſſembled,

aſſembled, and a pardon was promiſed to all who returned within five days; at the ſame time they were aſſured that very ſevere puniſhment would be inflicted on any who were taken after the expiration of that time, or who ſhould in future attempt to leave the ſettlement.——Several appeared ſenſible of the lenity ſhewn them when their irons were taken off, but ſome of them appeared capable of the moſt deſperate attempts, and even talked of ſeizing on the ſoldiers arms; they were, however, informed, that no mercy would be ſhewn to any who were even ſeen near thoſe that might make an attempt of the kind.

All the whalers who came into the harbour to refit, ſailed again by the 1ſt of December, and the Albemarle and the Active tranſports ſailed on the 2d for Bombay, where they were to load with cotton for England.

A new ſtore was now covered in at Sydney, which was the beſt that had been built in the colony; and was intended for the convicts cloathing and the implements of huſbandry: it has a ſecond floor, and is eighty feet in length by twenty-four feet in breadth. A building of fifty-ſix feet by twenty-four

was likewiſe covered in at Parramatta, and was intended for a place of worſhip, until a church could be built.

The idea of finding a Chineſe ſettlement at no great diſtance to the northward, ſtill prevailed among the Iriſh convicts; and on the 4th of December, two of them ſtole the ſurgeon's boat, but they only got a few miles to the northward of the harbour when they were obliged to run her on ſhore. Some officers who were out a ſhooting, ſaw this boat on the beach, and ſtove a plank in her, that ſhe might not be carried away; they alſo ſaw the two men, who ran into the woods; however, a convict who had been ſix weeks in the woods, and was ſcarcely able to walk, gave himſelf up to the officers, and, with their aſſiſtance, was able to return to Sydney.

Many of thoſe convicts who left the ſettlement, as has already been related, came back; ſome were ſtill miſſing, and ſeveral were ſaid to be killed by the natives. The miſerable ſituation of thoſe who returned to the ſettlement, would, it was believed, moſt effectually prevent any more excurſions of the like nature.

Governor

Governor Phillip had frequently been ſolicited by Bannelong, to receive Ballederry, the native who wounded a convict in June, 1791, into favour again, but he always refuſed; however, on the 14th of December, he was informed that Ballederry was extremely ill. The ſurgeon had been to ſee him, and found him in a fever; and the firſt queſtion he aſked was, whether the Governor was ſtill angry, or if he would let him be brought to the hoſpital to be cured. Bannelong had fetched the ſurgeon to Ballederry, and returned with him to Governor Phillip; who ſaying he was not angry, and telling him to bring his companion to the ſettlement, he ſaid he would; ſo, early the next morning, Ballederry was brought in. At firſt, he ſeemed under great apprehenſions, but they preſently ſubſided, on the governor taking him by the hand, and promiſing that when he was recovered he ſhould reſide with him again. Poor Ballederry appeared to be very ill, and went with the ſurgeon to the hoſpital.

Of thoſe convicts who were received from the laſt ſhips, one hundred and fourteen males, and two females, died before the 15th of December: the number of ſick had conſi-

derably decreaſed lately; the ſurgeon's liſt being now reduced from ſix hundred and two to four hundred and three.

The Matilda and the Mary-Ann tranſports came into the harbour on the 16th; theſe ſhips had been out but nine days. The Matilda had been into Jervis-Bay, but had not ſeen any ſpermaceti whales. The Mary-Ann fell in with one ſhoal; it was in the evening when all the boats were abſent from the ſhip: the maſter was in hopes they ſhould have the fiſh about them the next morning, but he had the mortification to find that a current had driven the ſhip fifty miles to the ſouthward.

The Gorgon dropped down the harbour on the 17th of December, Captain Parker intending to ſail the next day. The detachment under the command of Major Roſs were embarked, agreeable to the orders which had previouſly been given.

Here cloſes the Journal of Governor Phillip; which contained the lateſt accounts from New South Wales; being received by the Gorgon, that left Port Jackſon in December, 1791.

The

The following particulars, reſpecting NORFOLK-ISLAND, which comprehend the ſubſtance of Lieutenant-Governor King's lateſt diſpatches, being dated the 29th of December, 1791; were received the 30th of November, 1792, by the William and Anne tranſport, that ought to have touched at Port Jackſon, but was forced by contrary winds to bear away for England.

THE wheat harveſt at Norfolk-Iſland was finiſhed by the 10th of December, 1791; when about one thouſand buſhels of wheat were got in, and well thatched in ſtacks. The Indian corn had ſuffered by a ſeries of dry hot weather ever ſince the preceding July.

Lieutenant-Governor King finding great inconvenience from the ſize and conſtruction of the frame of a ſtore-houſe, which was 80 feet long by 24 feet wide, as well as from its ſituation, it being near the ſhore, determined to build one, 40 feet by 24, on the Terrace, at Mount-George: he had alſo found it neceſſary to build a goal, oppoſite the barrack-yard, and another at Queenſborough.

A good

A good road has been made to the landing rock in Caſcade-Bay, ſo that now any thing may be landed with the greateſt ſafety.

Ten ſettlers, who lately belonged to the Sirius, were doing exceedingly well, but there was reaſon to fear that great part of the marine ſettlers, when the novelty of their ſituation was gone off, would have neither ability nor inclination to improve the portions of ground allotted them: they had already been extremely troubleſome, and the lieutenant-governor had been under the neceſſity of impoſing heavy fines on two; the firſt, for beating the watch and uſing inflammatory language; and the ſecond, for cruelly beating a convict woman.

The convict ſettlers were all doing very well, and were quiet, attentive, and orderly: they were increaſed to the number of forty; the whole number of ſettlers on the iſland were eighty, and it will be difficult to fix more until the ground is farther cleared.

A quantity of coral and other teſtaceous ſubſtances, with different kinds of ſtones, were burnt forty-eight hours, and produced a very fine white lime, much ſuperior to any lime

lime made of chalk, and it proved a very tough cement.

Eighteen convicts, under the direction of an overſeer, who is a ſettler, were employed in making bricks.

Lieutenant-Governor King finding it neceſſary to diſcharge Mr. Dorige, the ſuperintendant of convicts at Queenſborough, has appointed Mr. D'arcy Wentworth to ſucceed him: Mr. Wentworth had behaved with the greateſt attention and propriety as aſſiſtant-ſurgeon, which duty he ſtill continued to diſcharge. Mr. W. N. Chapman was appointed ſtore-keeper at Phillipſburgh.

A corporal and ſix privates were ſtationed in a houſe with a good garden to it, on an eminence commanding Queenſborough, and a ſerjeant and ten men were fixed in a ſimilar ſituation at Phillipſburgh, and they were kept as ſeparate from the convicts as poſſible.

The lieutenant-governor had been under the neceſſity of appointing a town-adjutant and inſpector of out-poſts, and he named Lieutenant Abbott for theſe duties; he alſo eſtabliſhed rules and regulations for the obſervance of every perſon on the iſland, and for keeping a night-patrole: a deputy provoſt-martial was alſo appointed.

The

The wreck of the Sirius went to pieces on the 1ſt of January, 1792, and every thing poſſible was ſaved out of her. The ſame day, every perſon on the iſland went to a reduced allowance of proviſions, but the fiſh daily caught was ſufficient to ſerve all the inhabitants three times over.

Some of the ſettlers were permitted to employ the convicts as their ſevants, on condition of maintaining them without the aid of the public ſtore; and ſome of the convicts were allowed to work for themſelves, on the ſame condition.

It will be abſolutely neceſſary to eſtabliſh a court of juſtice, as corporal puniſhments have but little effect; although robberies were confined only to a particular claſs of convicts, and were by no means general.

By the 15th of January, two hundred and ſixty buſhels of Indian corn were gathered in; a number of acres were then in different ſtates of growth, which were likely to yield about three hundred buſhels more. The wheat thraſhed well, and yielded plentifully. The granary was finiſhed, and every endeavour was uſed to keep the wevil out of it.

It has already been obſerved, that Governor Phillip took the Atlantic, Lieutenant Bowen, into the ſervice as a naval tranſport, and diſpatched her to Calcutta for proviſions: in her voyage to that place, Mr. Bowen touched at ſeveral iſlands, and had interviews with the natives, a ſhort account of which will not, perhaps, be diſpleaſing to the reader.

The Atlantic Tranſport, Lieutenant Bowen, in her paſſage from Norfolk Iſland to Calcutta, fell in with the Iſle of Pines, on the 14th of November, 1791; and, early the next morning, being not more than two miles diſtant from the land, Mr. Bowen ordered the cutter to be hoiſted out in order to go on ſhore, to cut down ſome ſpars for the ſhip's uſe: he was accompanied by the ſurgeon, the ſecond mate, and the carpenter, together with eight ſailors, and they were all well armed. They ran in towards a ſandy beach, but found it impoſſible to land with the boat on account of a heavy ſurf, and a reef extending in a line parallel with the beach: however, they landed on a coral rock and waded on ſhore, except two ſailors, who were left behind to take care of the boat, and bring her to with the grapnel without the

ſurf.

ſurf. Immediately on landing, the party ſtruck into the woods, which they found to conſiſt chiefly of fine pines, but none were ſeen ſo large as thoſe at Norfolk Iſland: a thick underwood prevented them from penetrating far, ſo that they preſently came back to the beach: on their return, they ſaw ſeveral obſcure foot-paths made by the natives, which had hitherto eſcaped their notice, and the carpenter, who had ſtrayed by himſelf to look for ſome ſpars fit for his purpoſe, came back in great haſte, ſaying he had ſeen two of the natives, who were naked, and without arms, and, after looking at him earneſtly for ſome time, they made off. This piece of intelligence might naturally incline them to believe that there were numbers of the natives at no great diſtance; notwithſtanding which, they again went into the woods in parties of two or three perſons each, having the precaution, however, to keep within hearing of each other. Mr. Bowen, the ſurgeon, and a lad who carried Mr. Bowen's blunderbuſs, had, with great difficulty, penetrated a conſiderable way, when they were alarmed by the cries of the third mate and two ſailors, who had been round a point of the land, and ſaw

ſaw about twenty-ſix of the natives armed with ſpears and clubs, running briſkly towards them. This noiſe alarmed all the reſt, and when lieutenant Bowen and the ſurgeon got to the beach, they found all their companions collected together. The party now took poſſeſſion of a riſing ground, which was conveniently ſituated to ſecure a retreat to the boat; this they had ſcarcely effected when the ſavages appeared, all of them armed with ſpears, and, advancing within twenty or thirty yards of our party, they ſtopped, and gave a loud ſhout: however, lieutenant Bowen reſolved to let them advance as nigh as he could conſiſtent with ſafety, before he attempted to reſiſt, or to fire on them. They had ſtopped for a few ſeconds, looking at their new viſitants, when Mr. Bowen gave his blunderbuſs to one of the ſailors, and advanced towards them; his example was followed by one of the ſavages (an old man, and who ſeemed to have ſome authority among them,) who advanced to meet him, but neglecting to throw aſide his ſpear, ſigns were made for him to lay it down, which he readily underſtood and complied with; Mr. Bowen then took a ſmall piece of ſcarlet cloth out of his pocket, and

diſplayed

diſplayed it; this was imitated by the old ſavage, who held in his hand a piece of cloth of their own manufactory; on this, Mr. Bowen preſented him with the ſcarlet cloth, and received his in return: all theſe proceedings were noticed by the reſt of the natives with great ſatisfaction, which they teſtified by loud and frequent ſhouts.—Peace being thus confirmed by theſe mutual exchanges, lieutenant Bowen's party laid down their arms at a ſmall diſtance behind them, the natives alſo laid down their arms, and a regular barter commenced; knives, nails, &c. being given in exchange for pieces of their cloth. Their numbers now began to increaſe, and ſeveral women made their appearance; theſe ſat down behind the men, and at a ſmall diſtance from our party, whom they gazed at with great aſtoniſhment. The natives who came laſt to the ſpot, being armed, cauſed ſome appprehenſions, and Mr. Bowen in order to prevent a ſurpriſe, which probably might happen notwithſtanding the harmony which at preſent prevailed, drew a line on the ſand, and made ſigns for the natives to keep on one ſide of it, giving them at the ſame time to underſtand that his men ſhould ſtay

on

on the other ſide; this they eaſily comprehended and complied with, and when any of the ſailors tranſgreſſed by going over the line, they never failed to remind them of it. Both parties now ſat down, each on their ſide of the line, and barter again commenced, nails and other trifling articles being exchanged for cloth, &c. In the courſe of this traffic the following ludicrous circumſtance took place. Mr. Bowen preſented one of the natives with a knife, and ſhortly afterwards, having occaſion to turn round, the fellow had the impudence to cut off the ſkirt of his coat, and was running away with it, but he was detected, and obliged to deliver it back.

A piſtol being fired as a ſignal for thoſe in in the boat to bring ſome jackets, trowſers, check ſhirts, and biſcuit, which had been brought from the ſhip to barter with the natives, the report alarmed them, and they ſtarted up immediately in order to ſeize their arms, but not ſeeing any of their viſitants ſtir, they ſat down again with their former confidence: ſeveral of them were cloathed, and ſome jackets and trowſers were diſtributed amongſt them, but they ſoon put them off and gave them to the women. A chief

now joined the natives who had not been ſeen before; he was a good-looking well-made young man, and not quite ſo black as his companions; he carried in his hand a very curious hatchet, which was underſtood to be an emblem of his authority: he brought three pieces of cloth, which he preſented to our party, and preſſed them very much to accompany him to the place of his reſidence, which invitation, however, they declined, but Mr. Bowen made him ſome trifling preſents.

One of the ſailors making ſigns for ſomething to eat and drink, the natives immediately ſent two men up the country, who preſently returned with ſome cocoa-nuts, a bundle of ſugar-cane, and the branch of a tree, together with two calibaſhes of water, which had a brackiſh taſte: the cocoa-nuts and ſugar-cane were put into the boat. During this time, the natives ſurveyed Mr. Bowen and his party with great attention, cauſing them to open their boſoms that they might ſee the colour of their ſkin, which they beheld with an appearance of wonder, particularly the women, who ſtill kept behind the men, and teſtified their ſurpriſe by laughing

and ſhouting. Moſt of the party were thus employed in ſatisfying the curioſity of the natives, when the carpenter drew off their attention by cutting ſome ſpars: it is impoſſible to expreſs the ſurpriſe which was painted in their countenances when they ſaw with what celerity the carpenter and his crew cut down the trees: they admired by turns the axes and croſs-cut ſaws, and, at length, the chief was deſirous of having the broad ax; a ſmaller one was offered him, which he refuſed, and would only accept the carpenter's broad ax; he was given to underſtand that he ſhould have it after they had finiſhed cutting down the trees, which ſeemed to ſatisfy him, and the natives aſſiſted the ſailors in getting the wood down to the beach: however, when the ſpars were ready to be rafted off to the boat, the face of affairs were entirely changed, for the chief would not ſuffer them to be taken away, and ſeveral of the natives ſupported him in this determination: the large ax was now offered him, but Mr. Bowen, obſerving the ſavages aſſembling in great numbers and ſnatching up their arms, unwilling to quarrel with them, ſeemed indifferent as to the ſpars, and turned round with

his party towards the boat; the chief then ſeemed concerned that they were going, and made ſigns for them to take away the ſpars; however, alarmed at ſeeing numbers of the natives ruſhing out of the woods armed, our party thought it high time to conſult their own ſafety by retreating towards the boat, eſpecially as they obſerved the natives coming over the line which had been drawn on the ſand. When they turned towards the beach, the ſavages preſſed hard after them, but, on facing about, they made a ſtop; it was therefore judged moſt prudent to retreat backwards, and the party were ſcarcely all got into the cutter before they were ſaluted with a volley of ſpears, one of which ſtruck with ſuch force againſt the boat's bow, that it required a good degree of ſtrength to draw it out; another wounded one of the ſailors ſlightly in the thigh, the reſt flew over their heads: they now fired at the aſſailants, but without effect, as a high ſurf prevented them from taking aim; it was, however, judged prudent to pull out of the reach of the ſpears. During this time, the chief already mentioned ran down to the water ſide unarmed, and made ſigns for them to come on ſhore, and,

turning to his countrymen, he ſpoke as if he wiſhed them to deſiſt; but his intreaties had no effect, for they ſtill perſiſted in their violent behaviour, and poiſed their ſpears by way of defiance: at length, Mr. Bowen took aim at one fellow, and, it was ſuppoſed, ſhot him through the body, as he clapt his hand to his breaſt, and immediately fell. Our party had the ſatisfaction to ſee it was the man who threw the firſt ſpear, and endeavoured to ſtir up his companions againſt them. This circumſtance gave the natives the firſt idea of fire-arms, for they immediately ran to the woods; and, if muſquets were only preſented, they ſkulked behind rocks or trees, or fell flat on their faces: but the affection of a woman was much admired, for, amidſt the terror and apprehenſion which this affair naturally created, ſhe came out to the wounded man, bound him with bandages of their cloth, and lifted him up from the ground; this pious duty ſhe was ſuffered to perform unmoleſted. As the natives were now retired, unwilling to loſe the ſpars which had coſt ſo much trouble, Mr. Bowen, the ſecond mate, and the ſurgeon, landed well armed, and were going towards the ſpot where the

timber lay, when they were called to by the ſailors in the boat, who informed them that the inhabitants were collected together on the rocks over their heads, and were ready to diſcharge their ſpears at them; on this, Mr. Bowen and his companions again betook themſelves to the boat. At this time, two chiefs, accompanied by him who had before behaved in ſo friendly a manner, came running down from the woods, and one of them, throwing down his arms, jumped into the water without heſitation, and ſwam off to the boat: when he came alongſide, he exchanged ſeveral pieces of cloth with Mr. Bowen, and gave him his throwing-ſtick, which was conſidered as a token of peace. Whilſt he was thus employed, the other two men were making ſigns for our party to come on ſhore, and giving freſh tokens of peace, by diſplaying pieces of cloth on their ſpears. Notwithſtanding this pacific diſpoſition of the chiefs, the rabble gave freſh ſigns of defiance; numbers of them came from the woods with bundles of ſpears, and they wore a cap to defend the head, made of the ſhell of a cocoa-nut: Mr. Bowen, therefore, ordered the boat to be pulled cloſe in to the ſhore,

and

and they preſented their muſquets, on which the natives all ran into the woods except the three chiefs, who placed ſuch confidence in our party as to ſtay behind.

As it was evident that nothing could be done with the natives without more blood-ſhed, the end of a rope was given to the chiefs on ſhore, which they faſtened to the ſpars, and the ſailors hauled them to the boat. In this buſineſs the natives never gave the chiefs the leaſt aſſiſtance, which gave Mr. Bowen but an indifferent opinion of their authority.

The natives of the Iſle of Pines are able-bodied, ſtout, well-made men; they are of different colours, ſome being a pretty deep black, and woolly headed, and others of a copper colour, with flaxen hair; but this colour probably was occaſioned by the uſe of powder. The greater part of the natives, and the chiefs were of this laſt deſcription. Their only cloathing was a piece of cloth round the waiſt; indeed, ſome wore a piece of the ſame round the head. This cloth is the ſame as that met with at Otaheite, and the other iſlands in the Pacific Ocean.

The only weapons ſeen amongſt theſe people were ſpears and clubs: the ſpears were about ſeven feet long, and ſome of them were ſtained with a kind of black dye, but they were neither barbed nor pointed with any ſharp ſtone or ſhell, as is the practice in New South Wales. The clubs had rather a formidable appearance, they had a large head well poliſhed. Their throwing ſticks were very ingeniouſly made: thoſe which the chiefs had were compoſed of a beautiful ſilky fibre, and others were made of coarſer materials. The chief who firſt came down to the party, had an axe, which he would not part with for any thing that was offered him; it was made of a hard green ſtone, fixed in a handle curiouſly poliſhed. The women were ordinary, and quite naked, except a curious matt which they wore about the waiſt.

In relating theſe particulars reſpecting the inhabitants of a part of the world ſo little known, the following ſingular circumſtance muſt not be omitted. One of the chiefs who came laſt down to the boat and preſented a piece of cloth to Mr. Bowen, aſked for another in return by the name of *colour*; he alſo pronounced the word *bead* very diſtinctly, pointing

pointing at the ſame time to a green bead which he wore round his neck. As it is not known that any Engliſh veſſel ever touched at this iſland except Captain Cook, it is very remarkable if they have retained the name and kept the bead ever ſince that period. No other ornaments of any ſort were ſeen among them. The Atlantic left the Iſle of Pines on the 16th of November, and on the 25th, they fell in with a ſmall iſland which had a lagoon of water in the center. There being a probability of meeting with turtle on the beach, the cutter was hoiſted out, and Mr. Bowen, the ſecond mate, the maſter, the ſurgeon, and the carpenter, together with ſix ſailors went on ſhore: they were but ſlightly armed, not expecting to meet with any inhabitants on ſo ſmall a ſpot. The iſland was found to be a coral rock ſuperficially covered with earth, and cloathed with trees of various ſorts, amongſt which the cocoa-nut tree was very numerous. This lagoon is not more than a quarter of a mile over in the broadeſt part; the lagoon fills the center, and has a communication with the ſea on the ſouth ſide the iſland. Some oyſter ſhells of an amazing ſize were found among the coral rocks. Mr. Bowen, with the ſecond mate, the ſurgeon,

geon, and a ſervant, went to the head of the lagoon, and, croſſing the iſland in a narrow part, they walked along the ſhore towards the place where they landed, ſtopping however by the way to knock down cocoa nuts, which detained them until ſun-ſet. When they came near the landing-place, they ſaw the cutter pulling off towards the ſhip in great haſte, with only the carpenter and three ſailors in her; it was ſuppoſed at firſt that they were going to the ſhip for fiſhing lines, and Mr. Bowen called to them to return, but he was preſently undeceived by ſeeing four or five canoes hard in purſuit of them; and as there were only four men in the boat, it was apprehended that the reſt were taken away by the ſavages; at this time, Mr. Bowen and the ſurgeon being rather a-head, ran back to alarm the ſecond mate and the ſervant, who had ſtayed behind to knock down cocoa-nuts, which was ſcarcely done before they heard the report of a muſket from the ſhip; this gave them the greateſt uneaſineſs imaginable, as they were afraid the Indians had boarded the veſſel, and the company being thus divided, thoſe on board would be able to make but little reſiſtance againſt ſuch numbers as the canoes carried: on the other hand, if

thoſe

thoſe on board were fortunate enough to drive them from the ſhip, they would probably return to the iſland, where the party were ſtill leſs able to reſiſt them: however, being determined to defend themſelves as well as poſſible, they put ſome buck ſhot into their muſquets which were before loaded with ſmall ſhot for birds, but, on looking over their ammunition, they could not muſter another round. It was now quite dark, and our party walked with the greateſt caution along the beach, when they were alarmed with a ruſtling among the buſhes and the noiſe of feet; and Mr. Bowen, who was foremoſt, imagining it to be the Indians, had his piece cocked ready to fire; but he had the pleaſure to find it was the three men who he ſuppoſed had been taken: theſe indeed added to their numbers though but little to their force, as they had no arms except the carpenter's axe.

It ſeems the ſailors were all buſied in pulling down cocoa nuts, and did not perceive the canoes till they were cloſe to the beach; ſo that thoſe who were neareſt the boat jumped into her, and pulled off without waiting for the reſt, who could not get down in time to join their companions. The party kept walking towards the landing place, which they

they ſoon attained, and preſently afterwards they were relieved from all their anxiety by the arrival of the cutter, which took them all ſafe on board. The canoes had chaſed the cutter within muſquet ſhot of the ſhip, and, it being apprehended they meant to board her, a muſquet was fired, at the foremoſt canoe, on which the natives ſet up a ſhout, and made off. There were five canoes, three of which were ſmall, and contained not more than ſix or ſeven perſons; the other two were at leaſt one hundred feet long, and held upwards of ſixty men each; they terminated in a high ſharp point at each end. A larger canoe than any of theſe lay at a diſtance during the chace, and made off with the reſt. Whether theſe natives came off with a friendly or a hoſtile intention, ſeems rather doubtful, and it was too dark to ſee what ſort of men they were, or whether they were armed. The Atlantic left this iſland immediately afterwards, and arrived at Calcutta on the 3d of February, 1792.

Governor Phillip returned to England in the laſt ſhip from New South Wales, accompanied by Bannelong, and another of the natives. When he left that place, the ſettlements were in the moſt flouriſhing ſituation,

tion, both with regard to grain and vegetables; hogs and poultry were in great plenty, and the black cattle were in a thriving ſtate. Great numbers of vines, which had been planted in various parts, throve ſurpriſingly, and bid fair not only to furniſh wine ſufficient for the uſe of the coloniſts, but a large quantity may be ſent to England. A quarry of excellent lime-ſtone has been diſcovered at Norfolk Iſland, which makes a cement equal, if not ſuperior, to what is met with in England; a quantity of this was ſent to Port Jackſon, and was found to anſwer their moſt ſanguine expectation; ſo that every inconvenience which they had hitherto laboured under in erecting buildings of conſiderable height and extent, is now entirely done away. In conſequence of the increaſing number of inhabitants, another ſettlement had been formed, which, though yet in its infancy, promiſes to vie with thoſe at Parramatta and Sydney Cove: in ſhort, this new colony, though in a far diſtant, and almoſt unknown part of the world, bids fair to anſwer every expectation and wiſh of thoſe who were the firſt to propoſe its being ſettled.

FINIS.

BRITISH MUSEUM 7 JU 76

By AUTHORITY.

This Day is published, in One Volume, Royal Quarto,

Conſiſting of Six Hundred Pages of cloſe Letter Preſs, Pr. 1l. 11s. 6d. in Bds.

Illuſtrated with Seventeen Maps, Charts, Views, and other Embelliſhments, drawn on the Spot, by Captains HUNTER and BRADLEY, and Lieut. DAWES,

AN HISTORICAL JOURNAL

OF THE

TRANSACTIONS AT PORT JACKSON AND NORFOLK ISLAND,

With the Diſcoveries which have been made in NEW SOUTH WALES, and in the Southern Ocean, ſince the Publication of PHILLIP's VOYAGE, compiled from the Official Papers;

Including the Journals of Governors PHILLIP and KING, and of Lieut. BALL; and the Voyages from the firſt Sailing of the Sirius in 1787, to the Return of that Ship's Company to England in 1792.

By JOHN HUNTER, Eſq;

POST CAPTAIN IN HIS MAJESTY'S NAVY.

LONDON: Printed for JOHN STOCKDALE, Piccadilly.

A Liſt of the PLATES in the above WORK.

1. A Portrait of Captain Hunter,
2. Vignette on the Title Page of a Native Woman and Child in Diſtreſs,
3. A large Map of New South Wales, ſhewing the River Hawkeſbury and every Part of that Country hitherto explored, by Lieut. Dawes,
4. A large Chart of Botany-Bay, Port Jackſon, and Broken Bay, with the intermediate Coaſt and Soundings, ſurveyed by Capt. Hunter,
5. The Southern Hemiſphere, ſhewing the Track of the Sirius,
6. A new Plan of Norfolk-Iſland, by Captain Bradley,
7. Track of the Waakſamheyd Tranſport,
8. A View of the Settlement on Sydney Cove, Port Jackſon,
9. A View of the Settlement at Roſe-Hill,
10. Canoes of the Admiralty Iſlands,
11. A Man of Lord Howe's Groupe,
12. Canoes of the Duke of York's-Iſland,
13. A Man of the Duke of York's-Iſland

} By Capt. Hunter,

14. A Family of New South Wales, by Governor King,
15. Non-Deſcript Shells, of New South Wales, Plate I.
16. Ditto - - - - - - - Plate II.
17. Ditto - - - - - - - Plate III.

*** *A few Copies of the above Work may be had printed on a Superfine, Wove Royal, Price 2l. 2s. in Boards.*